

# THE PHYSICS OF MIRACLES

TAPPING INTO THE FIELD OF CONSCIOUSNESS POTENTIAL

**Richard Bartlett, DC, ND**

**ATRIA BOOKS**  
New York London Toronto Sydney

 **BEYOND WORDS**  
Hillsboro, Oregon

**MORE PRAISE FOR RICHARD BARTLETT'S  
THE PHYSICS OF MIRACLES**

“I love most in this fascinating book ‘Some people are born wizards and other people have to work at it.’ *The Physics of Miracles* is a handbook for becoming a wizard!”

**C. NORMAN SHEALY, MD, PHD**, professor of Energy Medicine,  
President Emeritus

Holos University Graduate Seminary

“Richard Bartlett’s done more to move the field of energy healing forward, and trained more healers in the past decade than anyone else has done since reiki was introduced to the Western world. His methods are repeatable, teachable, and great fun as is his dynamic voice and enigmatic personality that emanates through each page of this evolutionary, revolutionary, book.”

**DEBRA LYNNE KATZ**, author of *You are Psychic, Extraordinary Psychic*, and *Freeing the Genie Within*

“Renowned healer Richard Bartlett, drifts away from traditional science and ventures out into a discipline outside his academic expertise with a proposal of theories that go far beyond today’s mainstream physics. This book invites you to look beyond personal concepts and biases. It will boggle your mind!”

**KLAUS HEINEMANN, PHD** (physics), author of *Expanding Perception* and coauthor of *The Orb Project*

“Bartlett’s revolutionary healing techniques suggest that physics is missing something. When consciousness interacts with matter, surprising effects occur which defy current science. We used to call them miracles. His work awakens us to a new physics of parallel realities, not as an abstract theory but as a way to live fully and achieve our dreams. His work shows that we are truly co-creators of our experience.”

**DR. CLAUDE SWANSON**, physicist and author of *The Synchronized Universe*

“What is this matrix that Dr. Bartlett is talking about? The best definition comes from the Sufi tradition: The matrix is that from which all things are continuously becoming. Dr. Bartlett’s book gives us the rules that govern how things become, i.e.

how we and everything in our world forms. These rules will make you laugh. The most important rule seems to be that there are no rules. The physicists will chuckle at this book. It will be good for their circulation.”

**JAMES L. OSCHMAN, PHD**, 2008–09 president of International Society for the Study of Subtle Energies and Energy Medicine, author of *Energy Medicine* and *Energy Medicine in Therapeutics and Human Performance*

**ATRIA BOOKS**  
New York London Toronto Sydney

 **BEYOND WORDS**  
Hillsboro, Oregon

## **The Physics of Miracles**

### **TAPPING INTO THE FIELD OF CONSCIOUSNESS POTENTIAL**

**Richard Bartlett, DC, ND**



A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc.

1230 Avenue of the Americas

20827 N.W. Cornell Road, Suite 500

New York, NY 10020

Hillsboro, Oregon 97124-9808

[www.SimonandSchuster.com](http://www.SimonandSchuster.com)

503-531-8700 / 503-531-8773 fax

[www.beyondword.com](http://www.beyondword.com)

Copyright © 2009 by Richard Bartlett

All rights reserved, including the right to reproduce this book or portions thereof in any form whatsoever without the prior written permission of Atria Books/Beyond Words Publishing, Inc., except where permitted by law.

The information contained in this book is intended to be educational and not for diagnosis, prescription, or treatment of any health disorder whatsoever. This information should not replace consultation with a competent healthcare professional. The content of this book is intended to be used as an adjunct to a rational and responsible healthcare program prescribed by a professional healthcare practitioner. The author and publisher are in no way liable for any misuse of the material.

Managing editor: Lindsay S. Brown

Editor: Julie Clayton-Knowles

Copyeditor: Henry Covey

Design: Devon Smith

Composition: William H. Brunson Typography Services

Interior photos: Mina Bast

First Atria Books/Beyond Words hardcover edition October 2009

**ATRIA BOOKS** and colophon are trademarks of Simon & Schuster, Inc. Beyond Words Publishing is a division of Simon & Schuster, Inc.

For more information about special discounts for bulk purchases, please contact Simon

&

Schuster

Special

Sales

at

1-866-506-1949

or

business@simonandschuster.com.

The Simon & Schuster Speakers Bureau can bring authors to your live event. For more information or to book an event, contact the Simon & Schuster Speakers Bureau at 1-866-248-3049 or visit our website at [www.simonspeakers.com](http://www.simonspeakers.com).

Manufactured in the United States of America

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

*Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data:*

Bartlett, Richard,

The physics of miracles : tapping into the field of consciousness potential /

Richard Bartlett.

p. cm.

Includes bibliographical references.

1. Holistic medicine. 2. Mind and body. 3. Quantum theory. 4. Consciousness.

I. Title.

R733.B2754 2009

613—dc22

2009022511

ISBN: 978-1-58270-247-6

ISBN: 978-1-43915-816-6 (ebook)

The corporate mission of Beyond Words Publishing, Inc.: *Inspire to Integrity To Dara Louise Bartlett, my little one, who has taught me to know more, love deeper, and to be expansive joy.*

*I also want to dedicate this work to*

*Lt. Col. Tom Bearden, PhD,*

*whose brilliant concepts concerning scalar electromagnetics and its applications have inspired me and countless others. He is a tireless warrior for truth and a defender of this nation's sacred freedoms.*

## **CONTENTS**

Acknowledgments

# **Introduction**

**1** It's a Bird! It's a Plane! It's . . . Superman?

**2** From the Beginning: How Matrix Energetics Started **3** Build Trust in the Unknown by Asking Open-Ended Questions **4** Fundamental Lessons in Duality

**5** Do Nothing Versus Technique

**6** The Quantum Conundrum

**7** The Science of Made-Up Stuff

**8** The Power of Command Versus Control

**9** Wait a Minute. What Just Happened Here?

**10** Collapsing the Wave

**11** Collapsing the Wave Function of the Human Experience **12** Trust Whatever Shows Up in the Moment

**13** Time for a Change

**14** Many-Worlds Theory and You

**15** The Physics of Miracles

**16** The Science of Invisibility

**17** Solving the Mystery of Levitation

**18** Archetypes: Making a Love Connection with the Stuff in Your Head **19** Practicing the Art of Innocent Perception

**20** Human Intention and Divine Intervention

**21** Take the Guided Tour—You’ll Be Glad You Did

**22** The Little Book of Mark’s Big Adventures

**23** Creating Advanced Artificial Templates

**24** The Manifestation Chapter

Matrix Glossary

Notes

Selected Bibliography

## **ACKNOWLEDGMENTS**

This book would not have been possible without a number of key players. First and foremost, extra-special thanks are owed to Melissa Joy Jonsson for her loving care and overseeing of every aspect of the transcription and editing of this book. To Cynthia Bartlett for having the initial vision to contact Beyond Words and establish a working relationship and for overseeing with loving eye and intent Matrix Energetics from its inception. To my publisher, Cynthia Black, for taking a chance on an unknown author and for believing in and supporting me each step of the way.

I would also like to acknowledge the unceasing efforts of Daphne Hoge, who understands the principle of keeping “the talent” happy. To Lindsay Brown and Julie Knowles, my principal editors, whom I gleefully tortured with minutiae and details, I am especially grateful. To Lisa Braun Dubbels, my publicist who tirelessly works on my behalf.

I especially want to thank my children: Victor, who has done some of the principal artwork for Matrix Energetics; Justice, who has taught onstage with me and embodies the principles in this book; and Nate, who is always there for me, providing love, support, and everything else I might need. Finally, I want to thank the staff and students of Matrix Energetics, including Ben, Alyssa, CeCe, Brandon, Carol, Karen, William, and Rebekah.

# INTRODUCTION

Everyone would love to experience a miracle, but doesn't it seem that there's never a miracle when you *really* need one?

There is a very tangible and real energy deeply embedded in this book. Like one of Harry Potter's magical texts, this book possesses a field of enormous potential.

Cradled lovingly within these pages is an incredibly powerful energetic template.

You too can use this consciousness technology, as thousands of others already have, to create "healing" for yourself, your family, and perhaps even the environment you live in.

What this book will show you is how what we call "miracles" in this day and age are actually indications of things already known to exist but not yet "proven."

However, it has been said before that "absence of evidence is not evidence of absence." When we change our consciousness around what is possible, rather than being limited by a reality construct dominated by what isn't possible, we discover that we are actually able to employ quantum energies and principles in our day-to-day lives in unexpected, and fun—and miraculous—ways.

A miracle transcends the limitations of most of our current scientific models, but this does not mean that there isn't a science that can explain miracles, if we really need to have explanations. Some might say that some of the ideas in this book are

"fringe science." Well, I would rather be out on the fringe with the Angels and miracles and the other wondrous things science can't adequately "explain." That's where the magic lives. And what if there were a way that

you could increase the incidence of miracles in your life? “*Would that be worth something to you, laddie?*”

(as *Star Trek*'s chief engineer, Mr. Scott, might say).

Keep in mind that all matter is comprised of energy, or fields of energy: humans, animals, stardust, trees, chairs . . . all form is made up of energy at a quantum level, and this is where the science of our so-called miracles occurs. Rupert Sheldrake is a biologist and prolific author who introduced mainstream audiences to the idea of the *morphic field* (see also *morphic resonance* and *morphic unit* in the Matrix Glossary): *A field within and around a morphic unit, which organizes its characteristic structure and pattern of activity. Morphic fields underlie the form and behavior of holons or morphic units at all levels of complexity. The term morphic field includes morphogenetic, behavioral, social, cultural, and mental fields. Morphic fields are shaped and stabilized by morphic resonance from previous similar morphic units, which were under the influence of fields of the same kind. They consequently contain a kind of cumulative memory and tend to become increasingly habitual.*<sup>1</sup>

## **TAPPING INTO THE MORPHIC FIELD OF THE MATRIX**

Matrix Energetics has a huge morphic field that allows you, with minimal effort, to step into a unified field of consciousness. Thousands of people, some traveling from far corners of the world, have attended the Matrix Energetics seminars to date and have read my first book, *Matrix Energetics: The Science and Art of Transformation*.<sup>2</sup> Everyone who has participated in some way with this Matrix has contributed a certain momentum of energy to Matrix Energetics' collective morphic field, or grid.

This powerful group dynamic allows you to amplify each other's desirable momentum and abilities, in service of the collective good. It can only benefit you to plug in. Since it already exists, you can both re-create and access this field anywhere, at any time. When you tap into the existing morphic field of Matrix Energetics, you are stepping into what amounts to a highly organized and powerful *consciousness technology*. This technology contains awesome “software” and features great technical support “in the field.”

You hold within your hands a morphic unit of the actual energy field of what I call *Matrix Energetics*. There is a great undercurrent of power contained within the pages of this book. It is not necessary to understand any of the scientific language within to benefit from the power it holds. This information can change your life in strange and wonderful ways! Magic and miracles are the same in any language, and they can and will speak directly to your heart.

This book is intended to be deeply absorbed into your unconscious awareness. To that end, it speaks to the reader in many different ways and on a number of levels.

Go easy on yourself if you don't understand an unfamiliar concept or if the subject material at times seems slightly beyond your conscious grasp. When you are reading this book, allow yourself to temporarily relinquish what you *think* you know. You can even skip the more scientific-looking material if it's not your cup of tea. The energy that is deliberately encoded within this book is available to you whether you understand it or not.

Many of the stories and concepts in the book are humorous; sometimes I am downright and unabashedly silly! You can take the concepts I share with you and use them as you see fit. Most important is to have fun with this material and watch how your life will change.

A young man shared an incredible story with me at one of my seminars. This man had been illiterate all his life, and yet he had developed his own unique way of reading. He would go to the library, check out a book that "looked interesting," and take it home. Unable to read it in a conventional manner, he would put it under his pillow at night and literally sleep on the information. The next day when he awoke, his mind would inexplicably "know" what was in the book.

And perhaps equally amazing, the greater the number of people who had checked out the book previously, the greater access he had to the knowledge within the book.

So if fewer people had read it, the details the man received were considerably sketchier in the scope and quality of the information he would

receive. I believe that he was able to perform this amazing feat because of the existence of morphic fields that Sheldrake talks about.

This powerful group dynamic allows you to amplify each other's desirable momentums and abilities in service to the collective good of all concerned. It is of benefit to you to plug in. You can re-create this grid anywhere, at any time. When you tap into the preexisting morphic field of Matrix Energetics, you are stepping into what amounts to a highly organized and powerful consciousness technology.

## **A QUANTUM MIRACLE STORY**

*I really appreciate the point Dr. Bartlett makes that we should not think that we are doing any "healing." I have a strong belief in God, and I often feel conflicted between that belief and my training with the traditional model of Western medicine, which is characterized by its emphasis of science over belief in spiritual values. I do not want to conflict with God, so when Dr. Bartlett says to stop thinking and that you are the healer, this really makes sense to me. Really, what we are doing is allowing for God, or God's grace, to do the work. This allows me to do my work comfortably and humbly.*

*As a medical doctor, I have two specialties: nuclear medicine (quantum physics) and pediatrics. I retired approximately one year ago and am now studying for a master's in holistic health. Without ever having attended a Matrix Energetics seminar, I have already been able to help two different people and in three situations. All I did was watch a video on YouTube of Dr. Bartlett doing the Two-Point, and along with God's help, these people have gotten better, in seemingly miraculous ways.*

*The first time I tried Matrix Energetics was when a gentleman called me up from church and said he could not urinate. He had blood in his urine. He wanted medical advice, so I told him to go to the nearest hospital. He could not afford it. The next day, I felt bad that I was not very compassionate and that I didn't help him. So I decided to track him down and try to help him. I wanted to heal him, even though I know that it is really God who heals.*

*Eventually I found him in the community and asked him to come to the hospital for a blessing. When he arrived, I gave him the spiritual*

*ministering. Then I decided to do a simple Two-Point: one in front and one in back. In the middle of this two-point process, the gentleman started urinating. To you this means nothing; to him it was miraculous. Within a day, all his urine tests were clear and he was out of the hospital the very next day.*

*The next person was a classmate of mine in an “energy healing class” who had a sinus problem. She had had surgery on her sinuses, but it did not help. She was always congested during class. During our breaks, we were supposed to practice quantum-touch technique. I thought what I was learning in the class would be too slow for her needs, so I decided to try Matrix Energetics. I created an imaginary holographic image of the sinuses and “noticed” where there were blockages, and then I just fixed them. Her sinus cavity cleared “just like that” in less than one minute!*

*Later on, she had another problem: she had torn a muscle in her leg, and although she had been trying acupuncture for several months, she was still in a lot of pain. She asked me to help. At first I tried to use the healing modality I was being taught, but it didn’t appear to do anything. Then I tried the Two-Point from Matrix Energetics.*

*I did the basic Two-Point without knowing anything about it other than what I had seen on YouTube. I felt what seemed like the muscle slapping back. In my experience, it is very difficult to heal something like this when it is anatomically out of arrangement. But when I saw what Dr. Bartlett was doing with bones and muscles using two-pointing, I thought to myself, “Wow. This is something way beyond what we understand, but I think it can be useful.” After I did the Two-Point on my classmate, she went running—and her pain was gone.*

**—D.S., university professor,**

***doctor of nuclear medicine and pediatrics***

I personally like a book that challenges me. That’s when I know that I am really meeting and (hopefully) transcending my personal boundaries and limitations. The information in this book is quite possibly unlike anything you have encountered before. Or perhaps it will serve as validation for what

you already know in your heart but haven't been able to put into words or action. In any event, you might like to open the book at random to a page and read a little bit, and then "sit with the energy" and let it seep in slowly and gently. The magic contained within will work for you even if you don't believe that it possibly could!

With this book, you will plug directly into the field of dreams and miracles that many thousands of people have already built for you. You get to experience all the benefits with none of the hassles. It is easier and more fun than you can possibly imagine to create quantum miracles in your life.

## 1

### **IT'S A BIRD! IT'S A PLANE! IT'S...SUPERMAN?**

My life, which is never what one could call entirely normal, turned completely bizarre in February 1997 when I saw Superman as a three-dimensional hologram while I was engaged in my busy chiropractic practice. Yes, it probably was a hallucination, but this particular one enabled me to heal the eyesight of a child instantly!

If you have read my first book, you are familiar with the story of how Matrix Energetics first came into being. Essentially, I was confronted with a young girl with amblyopia, commonly known as lazy eye, and I did not know what to do. Most of the tricks in my medical bag—the one with crystals and other strange and wonderful things in it—would be of no help in this circumstance.

I had driven up from Seattle to Livingston, Montana, where I was practicing as a chiropractor for the weekend in the office I owned. Having slept very little and worked all day, the veil between fantasy and reality, or alternate dimensions of possibility, was thinner than usual for me. (You can read the whole story in chapter one of my first book.) I still don't know what *really* happened, but the myth surrounding those events will do just fine. When confronted with something I did not know how to help or to heal, my subconscious mind offered to me the image of George Reeves as Superman, a powerful and useful archetype from my childhood.

One of Superman's many abilities is the power of x-ray vision, a very useful tool for a doctor to possess. I actually saw, through the projected image of Superman's x-ray ability, what was wrong with my little patient. I have never been one to question when the weird or wonderful shows up to offer me assistance. I acted immediately on the information I was presented with. Something new and amazing occurred, and the little girl was healed in that very moment.

Suffice it to say that it was entirely reasonable for me to project a holographic image of Superman from my subconscious outside of myself in order to solve the problem that was presented to me. I have always wanted to possess x-ray vision or clairvoyant sight. *Being Superman is a way to be able to see clairvoyantly without all the responsibilities of being a doctor who has x-ray vision!* I mean, imagine what it would be like if you saw clairvoyantly all the time. Perhaps you would have to wear special dark glasses like the *X-Men* character Cyclops. You could take off the shades when needing to "see," put them back on when the job was done, and then go on living a relatively normal existence.

While in chiropractic school in the 1980s, I saw a movie called *X: The Man with the X-Ray Eyes*, starring Ray Milland. In this movie, Ray played Dr. James Xavier, a surgeon who injected himself with a serum that allowed him to see right into people's bodies. This is a rather good ability for a surgeon to possess, you might think. In the movie, the hero saw that the chief surgeon was going to perform a life-threatening surgery on a young girl, based upon a wrong and potentially lethal diagnosis. Ray tried to convince the surgeon not to operate, but the girl was operated on anyway. She died, just as predicted. Ray's character was blamed for the other surgeon's screwup, and he became wanted for murder.

Taking refuge, he joined a circus carnival as a fortune-teller. There was a particularly moving scene in which a superficially minded woman wanted to hear about all the good things that were going to happen to her. Fortune-telling is supposed to be for entertainment purposes, right? Instead, Ray, looking at the malignant tumors growing unchecked in her body, told her the truth as he saw it:

"You are going to die young, soon, and in horrible pain."

Everywhere the fugitive doctor looked, he saw disease and suffering. Finally, unable to stand it any longer, he ripped his eyes out of his sockets. (Well, it was a

“Hammer Horror” film, so there had to be an ending like that. Now perhaps you understand why I subconsciously chose to let Superman be the go-between for my clairvoyant vision! See, it all makes sense now: let Superman do it or rip your eyes out in horror. Hmmm . . . that’s a hard choice. Let me think about that, and I’ll get back to you!)

The very next day after the “Superman Event,” as the myth has come to be called, there was something vastly different about my energy. Suddenly, the act of lightly touching a patient with focused intent created dramatic, often startling changes.

Bones would realign themselves, patterns of chronic pain would disappear, often with only one brief session, and scoliosis curvatures would realign right before my eyes.

Word traveled quickly among the members of the spiritual community that I was part of at the time. Everyone was talking about Dr. Bartlett and his miracle hands, and everyone wanted an appointment with me NOW! That first day after the Superman Event, there were so many people clamoring to see me that I worked until well after midnight.

Finally, when the last patient had been seen, I collapsed gratefully in my bed for a few hours of well-deserved rest. Unfortunately, the next day was Monday, and I was expected at school. With the heavy class schedule I was carrying, I couldn’t afford to miss a single day. So a few hours later, at 4:30 AM, it was time to sing, “Hi ho, hi ho, it’s off to school I go!”

One cannot burn the candle at both ends indefinitely and expect to get away with it. I was no exception. Upon returning to Seattle, I promptly contracted a nasty flu that incapacitated me. Perhaps due to my depleted reserves, the flu was only the first stop on my forced house rest. Within a week, my flu had become walking pneumonia. It was two weeks before I could even raise my head from my pillow, much less attend classes. At the end of my forced

convalescence, my friend Debbie visited me at home and provided a much-needed massage.

Recovering somewhat under her gentle ministrations, I roused my energy enough to reach out and touch her. She looked shocked. “Richard, what is that incredible energy?” she asked.

“You can feel it?” I asked her. “Oh, thank God. I’ve been so weak that I didn’t even know if it was still there!”

“It’s the most incredible thing I have ever felt. What is it?” she asked again. So I told her the fantastic story about the Superman Event, careful to leave nothing out.

She was, understandably, amazed.

“If you ever figure out how to teach this, if it can be taught, then I want it. You must teach me!” she insisted. I had no idea what would later transpire as a result of this conversation. At the time, Matrix Energetics was not even a gleam in my eye, but I promised that if it could be taught, I would happily teach her.

As time went on, this phenomenon seemed to grow stronger. Sometimes it revealed new and marvelous outcomes each week. Chronic conditions began to change even though they were often not even a conscious focus for the treatment. In addition, people began to report that their emotional states, belief patterns—their very lives—were mysteriously being transformed. Better still, these changes appeared to continue over time. My practice, always emotionally satisfying, became a profound and deeply moving day-to-day experience.

## **MIRACLE ON THE MOUNTAIN**

Four months after the Superman Event, it was lightly snowing in Bozeman, Montana, and I was driving my daughter home to Big Sky, where she lived in a trailer home with several friends. Although it was the middle of June, and snow was somewhat unusual for that time of year, it was not all that

unexpected. I carefully drove up the winding mountain road in my 1966 GTO.

I hadn't seen my daughter Justice very often since I had moved to Seattle to attend Bastyr's Naturopathic program. You have to be *some kind of crazy* to go back to medical school at the age of forty-two. After all, I had already been working as a chiropractor since 1987. During my first year in practice, I barely made enough money to feed my family. Unfortunately, my first marriage didn't survive the stress of those lean early years. Now ten years later, I was making a good, regular income.

What insanity led me to think that I could—or should—go back to school and do it all over again at this age?

I was taking thirty-one credit hours a semester. What that meant was eating, sleeping, and living for school. Although I attended medical school full-time in Seattle, every other weekend I drove for thirteen hours to Montana (where I still retained an active license) so I could practice Chiropractic and put food on the table.

The only reason I got to see Justice at all was because I didn't have a chiropractic license in the state of Washington. In order to arrange a little face time with Justice, she had agreed to play secretary for my still-thriving practice whenever I was in Montana. We had just finished a grueling ten-hour workday, and I was driving her home.

The trip was uneventful and we were mostly content listening to the powerful roar of my Pontiac's 389 c.i. engine as we carefully wound our way up the icy mountain road. Safely arriving at my daughter's doorstep, I gave her a hug and told her I would pick her up first thing in the morning. As I drove off to return to my sleeping quarters in Livingston, I had no idea how my life was about to be turned topsy-turvy again!

Driving slowly back down the winding road, I suddenly saw something in the road up ahead. Was it really there? Or was what I was seeing just a hallucination?

(When you've had an experience where you have seen Superman in a clinical setting, reality is pretty much up for grabs.) Slowing down, I looked more closely.

Yes, there was definitely someone or something standing in the middle of the road. I pulled over and stopped my car.

Suddenly I could see clearly, with my mind's eye, a vision of a man wearing a brightly colored turban standing in front of me, his right arm upraised in greeting.

Not wasting a moment on pleasantries, he addressed me in a powerful, commanding tone, saying, "I will let you have what you desire if you promise never to raise your hand in order to harm any part of life." I immediately nodded my agreement to his terms. With a gentle bow of his head, he looked me in the eye and commanded, "So let it begin!"

In the next moment, I heard a whooshing sound and felt as though the top of my head had been pried open and its contents were gushing out of my skull and into the sky. In my mind's eye, I saw and felt something huge descending from directly overhead.

Have you seen the movie *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*? Do you remember the scene where the giant, multistoried spaceship descends onto the landing platform on top of the mountain? That is the closest analogy I can give you to what I experienced in the next several minutes. Perhaps it will help you to imagine a giant, multicolored spinning top, and you will have some idea of what I felt.

As this thought-form construct opened, I began to have rapid images and scenes flash into my awareness. A massive "spiritual software program" began to download into my brain. Even though this program continued for more than a few minutes, I quickly became acclimated to what was occurring and regained the normal use of my bodily functions. The Master appeared to me again and told me to touch my left rib cage with my right hand. Obediently, I did what was asked of me. The moment my fingers touched my chest wall, there was a loud crack and my entire ribcage physically shifted into a new position.

You see, I was born with an extra lumbar vertebra. To compensate, my rib cage had twisted in such a manner that it had always protruded uncomfortably on my left side. This distortion was so prominent that when I was young, if I lay on my left side, I could feel the thrumming of my heart beating against my chest. I could not sleep on my left side because the vibrations of my heart against my rib cage would keep me awake.

However, as soon as I touched my left side as bidden by the Master, I was healed and noticed my rib cage reformed in a new and much more comfortable position.

Tears of gratitude flowed down my cheeks; I could scarcely believe what had just occurred. In the blink of an eye, I was healed of a lifelong uncomfortable condition!

The Master nodded serenely once again and disappeared.

When I had collected my emotions and wits sufficiently, I continued the thirty-minute drive back to Livingston. As I was driving, two Angels (that is the only word I can use to name them) provided me with a running discourse in my head about what the new spiritual software was meant to do. This conversation went on for the next five hours and was one of the most uplifting events in my entire life!

I have always regretted that I did not write down any of the things I was shown that night as there was much instruction about the new energies that I was carrying and how to use them for healing. Some of the discussion was quite technical and involved sacred geometry, the activation of the chakras in my hands, and so much more. As the angelic download drew to a close five hours later, a beautiful feminine being said to me, “This event was scheduled for your birthday [in May], but we needed a number of uninterrupted hours alone with you in order for this process to be completed. Happy Birthday!”

**2**

**FROM THE BEGINNING: HOW MATRIX**

## **ENERGETICS STARTED**

It was a bright summer day in Seattle two years later. On that particular morning, I was waiting in the Bastyr clinic for my next patient to show up when there was a knock at the door. When I opened it, there stood an unassuming blond man.

## **MARK ENTERS MY LIFE**

“You’re Dr. Bartlett, aren’t you? I have heard a lot about you, and I am really glad to meet you. I have studied all these different healing techniques and wondered what you would suggest I study next,” he said, handing me a piece of paper containing a long list of techniques.

Looking at the paper, I realized that I had studied everything on his list and had mastered many of the techniques.

“Who you think I should study with next?” he asked.

“Since I know all these techniques and can probably even teach you some shortcuts, I suggest that you study with me,” I replied.

“All right, I’ll do that!” he responded enthusiastically. Little did we know at the time that this was the beginning of a lifelong friendship.

Over the next four years, I taught Mark Dunn everything I had learned in my twelve years of unconventional and downright “weird” medical practice. The one thing he couldn’t get, much to his increasing frustration, was how to do what I did with my hands—what he called that “energy thing.”

You see, Mark had set up his reality in such a way that he misunderstood what I was doing. He thought I was “doing something” with my hands and there was some transfer of energy. Because Mark continually questioned my process, I began to read books about quantum physics in an effort to understand and explain just what was happening with my “energy thing.” It was within the more esoteric aspects of *quantum field theory* that I begin to

form the foundational principles that underlie what is now called Matrix Energetics.

To Mark's chagrin, my second student learned the basic principles behind what I knew in about four hours. Today, Matrix Energetics can be taught to anyone in a single weekend seminar.

The first Matrix Energetics seminar was taught in September 2003 to a total of twenty-seven people. Since then, the Matrix Energetics experience has become an international phenomenon. You do not even have to attend a seminar to learn Matrix Energetics (although they are a lot of fun). Many people have learned Matrix Energetics and have experienced miraculous results in their lives from simply reading my first book or watching me demonstrate the "techniques" on YouTube. (If you have not yet read my first book, you might benefit from doing so.) This second book will take you far deeper into the Matrix and accurately reflects my most up-to-date theory and information. I have read more than a hundred texts about quantum physics in order to understand the little bit I now know. Mostly, I learned how much I didn't know—and would perhaps never understand. Even the famous physicist Richard Feynman knew that if you think you understand quantum physics, then you have not understood what the theory says.

Mathematics and physics are unconscious symbolic languages. They are meant to stimulate higher brain function—not the hired hand left brain's higher analytical functions,

but,

instead,

the

right-brain

awareness

of

symbolism

and

interconnectedness. The problem is that we have made science a *closed system*. The equations we devise to explain the unexplored or unknown have to make “sense” to our left brain’s way of thinking and perceiving. If it does not make sense and fit into our closed loops of reality, then we will just chop pieces off until it does. You cannot imagine how many times this has happened in the history of physics.

This book will talk about the technology and science of the forbidden *aether physics*. When you read more than 140 science and physics-related books in a few months, you begin to notice some glaring discrepancies in the classical or standard physics model. You begin to suspect that maybe there are a few pieces missing here and there.

The problem with the classical model of physics is that the x factor of consciousness is not taken into account. Without the acknowledgment of the role consciousness plays in our experiments performed in life’s laboratory, what you get are the unconscious expectations of the observers performing the experiments. The standard model in physics is a closed system. In a closed system, the effects of consciousness are excluded. In such a system, there is no room for miracles.

## **MATRIX ENERGETICS AS A USEFUL MYTHOLOGY**

Through Matrix Energetics and within the pages of this book, I am going to share with you a powerful and useful mythology. Keep in mind that anything you or I embrace as truth is probably somewhat of a distortion. We put our central concepts and cherished ideals in play until something better comes along. Consider some of the things I share with you as placeholders until something better arrives at your doorstep.

Always champion your highest truth for the expression of your greatest good. My spiritual teacher, Elizabeth Clare Prophet, used to tell me that what she gives to the world is her best effort. She emphasized that if she ever sees anything better that rings more true for her, she would be there in

a heartbeat. Be a servant to your heart's inner truth, and your life in turn will bow to you as its Master.

The less you know about physics and math, the more you are probably going to embrace the ideas in this book. From a purely scientific perspective, if you are a physicist, you will see this material quite differently. Please don't let that stop you from considering some of these concepts.

Go ahead and help yourself to an extra portion of nonsense, if that's how you perceive it. It could just be good for you. At least it doesn't taste like brussels sprouts! Some things, even though they might be good for you, can just leave a bad taste in your mouth.

*It really doesn't matter if you believe me or not; these ideas can still change your life.*

## **MATRIX ENERGETICS: WHAT IT IS AND WHAT IT ISN'T**

There are no hard and fast set rules that say, "This is Matrix Energetics." Matrix Energetics doesn't exist as such; I made it up. Well, I made up the name and the tools to access and understand it, but there are also underlying principles at play, which I didn't make up. However, very few people will admit this about their so-called techniques or methods. I made it up, but I did not invent the science that I present within these pages.

I have attempted for this last half of my life to serve and heal the sick. I have always desired to provide comfort where it is needed. Above all, I have tried to stay curious, humble, and ever questioning. I can now serve many more people than I could ever reach and help in private practice. Through the Matrix Energetics books and seminars, I have been able to positively impact the lives of many thousands of individuals throughout our planet. I hope that this book can be a stepping-stone for you to new levels of possibility and mastery.

**3**

## **BUILD TRUST IN THE UNKNOWN BY ASKING**

## OPEN-ENDED QUESTIONS

*By cultivating the habit of asking powerful, mind-altering questions, you are training your right brain to respond to the signals from your subconscious.*

The reason I ask questions is not because I know anything. I do not. I ask a question because I am curious about whatever engages the lens of my attention:

“What is useful about what I am noticing in the moment?”

To get “in the moment,” ask a question, step back, and observe any internal or sensory response. When I say “observe,” I am using visual language. However, anything you notice from the domain of your five senses after asking the question is potentially useful and possibly life altering. At this point, all I’m asking you to do is to ask the question and then suspend any preconceived thoughts around it—and notice anything that is different from what you were noticing before. I know this sounds somewhat cryptic right now, but it will all make more sense as we go along.

*Persistence and belief are the keys.* Believe in yourself. You have the right to guidance, love, and assistance from the realms of Spirit. Whatever question you ask sends your mind on a search for the answer to your query. Your brain, at certain levels of activity, functions just like a machine. Whatever input you provide will be received in the language of the realm with which you frame your request. If you expect to get visions or dreams from beyond the veil of conscious reasoning, you will get them eventually. As you ask questions, trust that whatever shows up is useful in some way. Target what you want by asking better-formed, open-ended questions.

If you ask questions such as “Why can’t I do this?” you can cultivate and perfect the skill of obtaining completely *useless* data. Believe in yourself as you ask questions. Even seemingly nonsensical imagery means you are getting something *useful*: nonsensical imagery means you are forming a bridge with your subconscious mind. Your conscious mind puts filters on everything you perceive and tries to make sense of it. Therefore, imagery

that arises unbidden and may not appear to make sense quite likely represents far more data than is usually available to the conscious mind.

This is what remote viewers in military operations were taught in the 1990s.

Whatever imagery they received, they were told to write it down and pay attention to it. The more unique it was, the more potentially important it was. In fact, the methodology taught in Matrix Energetics owes debts to both individually specific dream imagery (Jungian analysis) and classic remote viewing protocol as taught by the Stanford Research Institute and the U.S. Army.

If you begin to trust that you deserve whatever knowledge you require, you can have it. No one is going to stop you. No one will slap your hand down when you reach out in order to know and to be more. Try couching your requests, concerns, and desires in the language of fun; the universe will be quicker to respond to your needs.

I will cover in much greater detail the science of asking life-transforming questions later in this book. For now, trust me when I say that within the question lies the answer.

*Ask, and it will be given to you; search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened for you. For everyone who asks receives, and everyone who searches finds, and for everyone who knocks, the door will be opened.*

### **Matthew 7:7–8**

You can have exactly what you want as soon as you stop trying to control what shows up in your life. Accept the Grace and Love that you are and trust that things are just as they are meant to be. When you accept where you are, you can let go of the emotionally charged state of duality that always wants something better. When you truly let go, the next step in your evolution of consciousness is waiting for you.

### **WHY CAN'T I JUST MAKE MY PROBLEMS GO AWAY?**

There are a number of people performing amazing feats of healing in a far more impressive way than I am. They might be domestic engineers or vacuum cleaner salesmen or electrical engineers. Medical training is both a blessing and a curse. As a medical doctor, you are trained to see health and well-being in a prescribed fashion. My first response to the medical method is to ask, “What is wrong with a system that is compelled to share with the patient first what the worst possible outcome could be?”

How would I even begin to answer such a question? Instead, in order to provide a fair and balanced second opinion, why not focus on what could go right for a change? Perhaps some things might get better when we stop focusing exclusively on the problem.

You too can tap into the template of consciousness that is Matrix Energetics.

Together, we can create something new and exciting. Every person who reads this book can, and will, become part of that grid of expanding choices and new abilities.

How many of you are doctors? Raise your hands. Now put them down. You are not in the classroom anymore. Stop taking notes in the margin of this book. There will not be a test on this material later.

That is not meant to suggest that this material will not test you. Bruce Lee talked about “the way of the intercepting (open) fist.” A much more productive approach with this book would be to employ “the way of the intercepting (open) mind.” My teacher, Dr. M.T. Morter, president of Parker Chiropractic College, where I went to school, told us to “study everything and believe nothing.” It does not matter whether you believe in something or not as long as you use your knowledge and experiences in order to become more of who you really are. *Trust whatever shows up in your awareness even if it doesn't make any sense or appear to be useful.*

Symbolic information is generated by the right brain and represents a potential encoded capacity of around forty billion bits of information. Contrast this with the left brain's paltry calculated sum of seven (plus or

minus two) bits of info per second. Some less stingy researchers now put that number a little higher, at forty bits per second.

I want to meet the superhuman grad student who actually counted those forty billion bits per second. Of course, it's not possible to do that; he or she made up that number based on some calculations. But that huge number and all that information make it all sound credible, don't they? The point is that you might want to pay attention to the nonsensical-appearing data, as it may potentially represent far more encoded information.

You do not really know you know something until things start happening around you, within you, and through you—until you experience it. Then you know you know. It is the difference between the Gnostic principal of “I know” and “I think”

versus “I wish I knew (I used to know . . . maybe).” **Knowing has nothing to do with thinking, but rather is a quality found in and through the heart.**

I now believe that when we are able to suspend conscious thought, however briefly, the field of our heart takes the reigns. I believe that the heart's wisdom has instant access to the right brain's forty billion bits of information per second. So, based on this theory, *the less you try to think, the more powerful your outcomes will be.*

### **WALKING YOUR TALK (A BIT TOO CLOSE TO THE EDGE)**

Some time ago, I fell off the stage in Vancouver and broke my leg. I was dancing to The Doors song “Touch Me,” and I got into a shamanic state with Jim Morrison. (I suspect that he was messed up when he recorded that song!) I forgot there was a stage and that I had a body. I was reminded pretty quickly. The stage was only about three feet high, but *I* felt a lot higher than that at the time.

I fell onto my outstretched leg and heard it pop in a way that a leg should not. I felt a white-hot pain go through me, and my spirit was catapulted out of my body. It was that bad. As well as being horribly painful, it was somewhat embarrassing that it happened in front of three hundred people.

On the other hand, if you are going to make an ass of yourself, you should at least make it big enough for Jesus to ride into Palestine on.

Instead of palm fronds, I was waving the white flag: truce or consequences! I had to surrender into a modicum of acceptance concerning my injury or I would not be getting back up again anytime soon. The first place I visited in my mind was where you might expect under similar circumstances: “I want my mommy!” (This, of course, depends upon how good your relationship is with Mommy, but that’s where I went.) Then I flashed to a late-night commercial for the Identity Bracelet: “Help!

I’ve fallen and I can’t get up!” Where is that darn former surgeon general? There’s never one around when you need one! And the next thought was “Hospital!” Those three thoughts went through my head—and they are reasonable points of reference when you have injured your body.

I did not actually know that my leg was fractured until about ten days later. How did I know? The bone pain started to wake me up in the middle of the night. If you are a physician—and I am—there is a test to see if something is broken. You take a tuning fork, give the test instrument a thwack, stick it on the broken bone, and then it hurts like hell! If you are afraid to do a test because you already know how it will feel, then you do not have to do it; some things you just know.

This embarrassing incident at least proved useful. I got to demonstrate for the seminar participants the principles and practices I teach. What better example than becoming a lame horse before their very eyes? I was really hoping someone would shoot me.

I lay there and eventually did exactly what you will be learning in the pages of this book. I “flipped through realities” until I found one where my leg did not feel quite so bad. And then I flipped into a reality where I could stand on stage and continue teaching. It cost me a lot of effort and energy, and I had to limp out of the room with my daughter supporting me that night. The next day I went back onstage, and we performed a group healing. Everyone was worried about me and they actually wanted to help heal me. So this is what we did.

I brought my acoustic guitar out on the stage and we sang John Lennon's song

“Give Peace a Chance.” But we changed the words. We were singing instead, “All we are saying is give knees a chance.” Everybody got into it. We made it funny and flexible, so we did not go to the reality where it was broken. I thanked everyone assembled. After that, my knee started to get better and better.

### **“DOUBTING THOMAS” NO MORE**

*I remember sitting in the audience, listening to Dr. Bartlett tell this story of falling off the stage at a previous seminar, healing it, and continuing to teach the seminar—with nothing much to show of the damaged leg only two weeks later other than a small limp—and thinking to myself, “Yeah, right. I just spent HOW MUCH*

*money on this?”*

*My “healing” experience at that time consisted of a four-week chi-gong class taught by my veterinarian and his wife, and now this seminar that I had flown halfway across the country to attend, taught by a man who sees Superman.*

*Let's just say that my faith wasn't exactly cemented, and yet despite “logical”*

*evidence to the contrary, I instinctively knew that there had to be something to this Matrix thing. And because of that instinct, doubt or no doubt, not only did I attend levels one and two but also level three a few weeks later in Miami.*

*By the time I got through level three, my brain was spaghetti. Regardless, I practiced on friends, family, pets, my vet—pretty much anyone who wouldn't laugh at me . . . at least to my face, anyway. But no matter how much I practiced, I didn't have anything solid that I could take at face value as proof that, yes, this Matrix Energetics really did work. A few weeks later,*

*I got my proof in the form of a freak accident with a six-pound Chihuahua named Bitty Bo Bitty.*

*My afternoon began as any ordinary afternoon might. I was dog-sitting Bitty for my dad when I decided it would be nice to take Bitty and my two dogs for a ride as I drove out to his house in the country to feed his outdoor dogs and cats. I parked, rolled down the windows, and told Bitty and my two dogs to stay in the car and that I would be right back—something I had done a thousand times before.*

*I looked at Bitty standing in the driver's seat, wagging her little tail and looking at me with love as I got out of the car. I turned, slammed the door shut behind me, and panicked when I heard the most heart-wrenching scream I have ever heard in my entire life. I snapped my head around and saw Bitty's right hind leg, no bigger in diameter than a pencil, slammed in the door! It was bent at an unnatural angle behind her and up in the air in a V-shape, where it was snapped in two and bleeding.*

*I jerked open the door and snatched Bitty up as I jumped back into the car. I dialed the vet and babbled something about cutting the dog's leg off as I sped out of the driveway. My vet (who was also my chi-gong instructor and who had introduced me to Matrix Energetics) instructed me to "work on her while you drive."*

*Keeping one hand on Bitty's leg and one hand on the wheel, I began to work on the dog. Immediately, she stopped screaming in pain. I looked at the clock and began to count her backward in time: 4:38 PM, 4:30 PM, 4:15 PM, 4:00 PM . . . I asked for anyone who could help me to help: God? Angels? Jesus? I imagined multiple clones of me working on the dog. I tried to tap into the knowledge of the universe by asking questions such as, "What would Dr. Bartlett do? What would Jesus do?"*

*I tried what I had learned at the Matrix Energetics seminars: windows, modules, and frequencies. I visualized a healing energy ball right at the point that her leg was snapped in two. I two-pointed her hind legs using visualization, since one hand couldn't leave the wheel. With the amount of blood I could feel seeping through my clothes from her bleeding leg and the thirty minutes it took to get back to town, I didn't have any choice but to*

*work on her and hope for a miracle. My nervous breakdown would have to wait.*

*I visualized her running in the yard that morning and asked, “What if Bitty could run as fast now as she did this morning?” I ran through a list in my head of anything I could think of that would need healing and of releasing pain, adding blood, perfect veins, bones, ligaments, tendons, cells . . .*

*In short, I did everything I could think to do. I arrived at the vet in record time.*

*I’m still not sure if time slowed down or if I was just driving like a bat out of hell. I had on two shirts and a pair of jeans, and all were soaked through with blood when I walked into the vet’s office. How much blood could one six-pound wannabe dog have? And did she have any left?*

*I handed the little dog to the vet, making a point not to look at her leg. The only thing I knew then was that somehow the dog had survived the drive. What I didn’t know was if she was literally bleeding to death or about to get her leg amputated and her name changed to “Tripod.” I kept my eyes fixed on the vet’s face, afraid of what I might see if I looked at Bitty’s leg. Now that I was no longer driving and concentrating on Matrix, the panic and guilt set in. I was devastated that I had caused the injury. After all, I was supposed to be learning to heal, not maim or kill a tiny, helpless dog that trusted me unwaveringly and that I loved dearly.*

*“The dog’s fine.” The vet smiled at me. I screamed, “No, she’s not! I just snapped her leg in two with the car door!” He answered, “She’s just fine. You did good! We’re going to have to get you a job on the rescue squad. You saved her.” I still didn’t quite get it—even as I watched Bitty now running around the room like nothing had happened, with nothing more to show for her visit to the vet than a tiny spot of dried blood on her hind leg that the vet covered with liquid Band-Aid.*

*LIQUID BAND-AID? You’ve gotta be freakin’ kidding me! And then it hit me like a ton of bricks: Dr. Bartlett really did fix his own broken leg—just like little Bitty’s leg was fixed with nothing more to show for it than a small bloody smear that wasn’t even half the size of a dime.*

*So there was my proof, running around on all fours as if the accident had never happened. As for me, I was covered in blood with my mouth hanging open. Who says the universe never says, “I told you so”?*

— *VH*

The miracle of my broken leg was that every time I took a step and it hurt like blazes, I had to *choose to take the next step in a reality where it did not hurt*. Did you hear that? So, first step . . . OUCH! That was a bad step! I really do not want to do that again! “Mommy, can I go back to my room now?” I was saying to myself as I was heading to the stage the next day. The next step just had to be better. How do you make the next step better? By not trying to make the next step better. If you try to make it better, you are tracking and ratifying how bad it is. How useful is that?

It’s not very useful!

You have a potentially infinite set of possibilities within the morphic grid for what can manifest in the next moment. Imagine with me that in a series of parallel dimensions there are a bunch of different legs laid out before you. One of those pairs of legs contains the reality where you can walk without pain. One way to access the most useful legs for the task is to ask the question, “Where is it?” You have to trust that when you ask, the answer will actually appear.

“Look at,” or in some manner “sense,” the many possibilities presented. Then feel for the “virtual space” that contains the best solution for you. With a little shift of your *focused intent*, you can choose the best possible outcome and with the least noticeable effort. Focused intent simply means putting something on your mental clipboard and then forgetting about it or letting go of it. If you hold on to the thought of what you want, then you have not released it to the universe. Therefore, how can it be fulfilled? If you ask where something is and nothing happens, you may need to work through a little issue with trust. And, of course, being able to do something like I am suggesting does take a little practice!

How did I know if I had actually accomplished *anything* with all this parallel dimensional posturing? Because my knee would often rotate, it

would click, and then my gait would adjust. My next step felt easier and more fluid. Then I would take another bad step. Once you have a reference for creating an imbalance called

“broken leg,” then you have to keep testing it. The Universe says, “Are you really sure?” In the next seminar a mere two weeks later, I stepped onto the stage and my leg was just fine.

## **WHEN YOU OPEN THE DOOR, GRACE CAN WALK THROUGH**

If a person asks you for help with a problem, what do you do? In my first book, *Matrix Energetics*, I wrote a section titled “The Problem with Problem-Sets,” in which I suggested the value in opening your mind and your process to something that perhaps you hadn’t even ever considered before. You can learn to open yourself to solutions when you trust—and get out of the way. By choosing to trust first, and act from that trust, you can open wide the door to the field of universal potential. All that is required is that you *pay attention, notice what you notice, and embrace*

*whatever shows up*. By doing this, you allow the principle of Grace to enter into the equation. This can change the odds, even in cases of debilitating conditions.

## **REVISITING THE PROBLEM STATE**

Healing and disease are two parts of the same equation of a closed loop. In a closed system, you can only get out what you put in. I think this is one reason why you only see or hear about miracles occasionally. If you think you are going to learn a healing technique in this book, I am sorry. That is not going to happen. Dissolve the ideas that healing and disease are a polarity and that one can’t exist without the other. In an *open system* that is not true. In an open or so-called free energy system, you can get more energy out than you put in.

A miracle is an example of an open system. This subject is germane to everything I teach in *Matrix Energetics*. When you create and begin to embrace a consciousness model that allows you to transcend the limitations of your physical reality, you can tap into the physics of miracles.

If you have a tumor or a condition, a disease, or whatever, *it has the potential to be healed instantly*. Transformation is a miraculous process that can transcend what you think of as the laws of physics. Here's the point: ***miracles operate outside your***

***normal reference for reality***. They happen all the time, but we sometimes miss them because *we habitually focus on what's still the same—on what's familiar and what we know and believe consciously*. We would have a lot more miracles in our lives if we simply began to notice what is different or new!

4

## FUNDAMENTAL LESSONS IN DUALITY

You are consciousness. That is what you are. You have chosen to manifest the patterns of information that appear in your personal reality in the form of conditions, structures, families, or finances. At some level, you have chosen everything in your life. Sometimes we actually choose by not choosing. All too often, some of us choose by being in polarity with what we do not want. If we do not want to develop a state of disease, what do we do? We eat right for our health. There is a hidden bomb in that concept, isn't there? If you eat right for your health, what might you be doing? At one level, you are eating to stave off disease.

If you are eating healthy foods in order to prevent disease, you are in an unconscious relationship with what you fear. If you are trying to prevent your cholesterol numbers from going up, you are in a struggle with cholesterol. If you are taking aspirin to prevent a heart attack or a stroke, you are in an unconscious and uncomfortable relationship with all those things. You are in a *paired spin* with what you don't want. In such a configuration, if your fears spin up, your health can spiral down. When did "an apple a day keeps the doctor away" become "an aspirin a day keeps the doctor away"? *Don't buy into all the medical statistics so completely that you become one!*

It is one thing to eat in a way that benefits you because you feel good when you do it. And eating in this manner might coexist with certain principles of

eating right for your health. Your personal needs and your energy, coupled with your beliefs, define what being healthy means for you. This is why diet varies with individuals. A person can eat only bacon, lose weight, have a healthy heart, and have his or her insulin levels go down. That diet might represent good biochemistry for that person.

Another person could eat only raw salads and do just as well without any other kinds of food. A person from a different planet might consume only raw sunlight and be full of light and energy! However you decide to eat should be congruent with your personal and cultural references for what is healthy for you.

## **WHY EATING RIGHT CAN SOMETIMES BE WRONG**

Health and disease as mandated structures and norms are bad ideas. As I've already suggested, when you are "eating right for your health," you might, unconsciously, be in a relationship, and a polarity, with disease. Bacon could be really great for your arteries. "All right, doctor, if you say so!" No, only if *you* say so! You can say, "I love you, bacon," and it could be just fine to eat it. I am being semi-serious. As a physician, I strongly suspect that much of the nutritional research out there is questionable at best. Much of the so-called health research is actually sponsored and paid for by huge corporate conglomerates, including the pharmaceutical giants.

When the research generates data other than what is desired by these companies, it can sometimes become buried. If a study conflicts with the financial bottom line of the corporate entity, a new study will quickly be undertaken to shift the outcome in favor of the product to be marketed. As the villain, Walter Donovan, in the movie *Indiana Jones and The Last Crusade* said, "Didn't I tell you not to trust anyone, Dr.

Jones?"<sup>1</sup> The problem is that if enough people believe a stated conclusion, it then becomes a reality for those ideas that fall into that particular box. That is why I say there is a surprise in each box. What particular box of beliefs have you built around yourself or allowed others to construct for you?

Do not do something just because the experts tell you to do it. Do it because in the moment it feels right and supports your physiology. Do it if it supports your need or belief system as it is showing up in the moment. Do you hear the flexibility in that? Or perhaps as you kneel in prayer at night, you might say a little prayer to Placebo, the medical god of spontaneous healing: “Now I lay me down to sleep. I pray Placebo [a Greek god?] my heart healthy to keep!”

## **AVOIDING THE PROBLEM STRENGTHENS YOUR RELATIONSHIP TO**

### **IT**

If you try to avoid a problem or pretend that it is not there, you run the risk of entering into self-delusional states. This is not helpful. You can acknowledge the problem for what it is, including all the emotional turmoil that may be connected with its manifestation. The charged state that exists when you hold on to the problem helps keep it tethered in physical existence. When you *show respect for the energy of the problem*, you actually diffuse some of the psychic charge off it. Then you can *gently set it aside*, perhaps just outside the threshold to the door of your conscious awareness. This allows you to be neutral about the condition or problem.

## **TIPTOEING AROUND IN THE MEDICAL HOLOGRAM**

One day a lady came into my office and proclaimed, “You are going to heal me.

You are my last hope!” She was obviously in the wrong place! Where did she get the idea that I was God? She said she had tried everything and I was her last chance.

I was her miracle.

When I “noticed” what I noticed about her, I saw needles and pills floating in her energy field all about her.

“Forget miracles as a last act of desperation,” I advised her. I fashioned an imaginary funnel for her and poured pills into the top of her crown chakra, saying,

“Go back to your doctor and trust that the medication he prescribed will help you.

Take your medication, because it is apparent to me that you are very congruent with the philosophy and approach of traditional Western medicine. Seek out your miracles wherever they present themselves for you. Trust that whatever shows up in your reality can be useful and may even be tailor-made to your individual needs.”

This woman had been seeing traditional doctors for many years and was internally congruent and in agreement with those methods at inner levels of awareness. She needed to recognize this in order to appreciate what had already been done for her. There is a huge morphic field of limitation called “disease”; if you tap into that field, you can, no doubt, create a lot of trouble for yourself. If that is the reality you are playing in, the results can continue to create the disease.

## **I AM NOT FOR OR AGAINST MEDICATIONS**

I am not big on medications and the whole single-bullet theory/shotgun approach to the practice of medicine. I am not against them, either. Because if you are against something, that means you have to be for its opposite. If you are for something, you are in polarity with the thing you are against. I am not kidding. Matrix Energetics isn't about being for or against anything. If you can find yourself somewhere in the middle, these distinctions cease to exist. *Everything, ultimately, is just patterns of*

*light and information.*

I am not suggesting that you deny your cancer or any other medical diagnosis. Do the radiation, chemo, or whatever is the best therapy in the prevailing medical paradigm. Those morphic fields of possibility can heal you if you are congruent with that model at a deep level of belief. Do not pretend to be in a model that is not yours.

As long as you play by the rules of materiality (or sin, disease, and death, if you prefer), you define exactly how that reality shows up and you respond accordingly.

Your perceptions about what you think is possible define you. If you need to take a medication or if you require a surgery, just do it. Do not feel like you have failed to achieve a passing grade in Consciousness Raising 101. The idea that you must be free from all adversity still ties you to the concept, power, and morphic field of what you are adverse to.

What you choose to believe is potentially unlimited. Choose to access what you consider to be relevant in the moment. Accept where you are as a good starting point—and then bring in other possibilities. Do not bother fighting against those things that are established. Bring in any possibility that allows it “to be” or “not to be” simultaneously. What is already present, if unwanted, can become something different. Change often occurs when you stop trying to change things.

## **THE PROBLEM-SET AND BREAKING THE RULES**

*My goal for you in reading this book is that you realize that all situations in life*

*are merely patterns of light and information.* If you want to change anything in your life, change the frequency, density, or quality of the light patterns that make up that reality. Let go of all doubt and *do this with a feeling of certainty.* Try not to second-guess what will be the final outcome. When you begin to do this, you will tap into one of the master alchemical keys for transformation.

Whenever you have a problem, don't always seek out the most obvious solution.

Break through your own rules whenever possible. When a rule is broken within yourself, you realize that there was never a rule in the first place. Every rule defines the border and the boundaries of your perceptual bias. There is no reason to play by the rules. Sometimes it is useful to be resourceful by pretending to play by different rules. If your rules are not

working so well, borrow somebody else's. You can even make up a new rule in the moment. Do what makes you smile. It is your reality and your life.

Set up a rule set so that when you take your attention off something, that is when the change occurs. When you don't need to do anything, change can occur instantly.

Of course, you will do this in such a way that you are still linked unconsciously with what you were paying attention to and trying to change. You are entering into your apprenticeship with the magical "art of not doing." Do not pay close attention. Use *fuzzy attention*, which allows for the power of indeterminacy to overrule any rigidity in the quality and form of your manifestations.

## **PROBLEM-BASED RESEARCH MODEL**

Dwelling on and analyzing a problem can sometimes reinforce its power. If you see problems everywhere you look, then look somewhere else! Learn to see with new eyes rather than conducting innumerable double-blind studies. Rocket scientist Wernher von Braun said, "Basic research is what I am doing when I don't know what I am doing."<sup>2</sup>

You can research new ways to see and to be. When you surrender to a humble state of not knowing, you can truly be open to learning something new. When you embrace a new perspective, you are literally learning to see things differently.

Behind every problem is a program. Every program creates and is sustained by its own unique morphic field. The morphic field is created by a person's beliefs and expectations and how these match his or her opinion of what "should" be.

Don't wait until you reach a threshold of agony before you are willing to try something different or see things in a new way. People who survive cancer often say it was the greatest gift in their lives. They say that the experience of having a major disease caused them to reevaluate what they thought was most important in life.

Why wait for that? Save yourself some trouble, if you can, and begin to reevaluate things right now. If you already have a major medical condition, then perhaps you could learn to minor in some other subject matter. Why make Life's Lessons harder than they have to be?

## **SUPERPOSITION OF THE PROBLEM AND SOLUTION STATES**

The power of observing from a different reference point is not meant to suggest that you must deny the existence of disease, suffering, or sadness. In quantum potential states, two *electrons* may actually occupy the same space at the same time. This principle in physics is called *superposition*. You can be deeply absorbed within—and completely transcend—your personal Passion Play. In this open state, the *waveform* of your conditions and its inverse (the solution set), or *phase-conjugate pattern*, may cancel each other out, thus preparing the way for a new outcome. As long as you are trying to do something, or even avoiding it, you are not in denial of it; *you are it*.

## **IT'S TIME TO CHANGE LIMITING PATTERNS OF EXPRESSION**

Absorb what is useful in the moment and run with it. When you are able to levitate or walk through walls or wave your hand and watch tumors fall off people, go right ahead and do it. I have heard many amazing stories from people who have incorporated the principles and practices of Matrix Energetics into their lives. I myself have witnessed the disappearance or dissolving of tumors and other “medical miracles.”

Does this *always* happen? I wish it were so. If I could heal cancer or anything else with a reasonably reliable certainty, I would do it full-time because I am acutely aware that there is much suffering in this world. I cannot myself heal anything.

*Believe it or not, the state of helplessness that we all sometimes feel reveals one of the most important principles in creating quantum miracles.*

## **DEVELOPING THE ART OF “NOT DOING”**

You do not want to enter into the state of needing to do something; that is often when you find you can't do something. Allow the state of consciousness of doing nothing to become available to you and make it your trusted friend. Consciously spend some time and energy constructing this state in advance, knowing that often nothing happens at just the right time and that everything happens when nothing is being consciously done.

*The less you do, the more power you can gain access to.* When you are trying to do something or make something happen, you are “doing” with your limited awareness of what can be done. When you are in the tide and flow of events, you are no longer resisting their quantum potential benefits. Now anything is possible and many miraculous things become more likely.

### **GIVE UP IN ORDER TO SUCCEED**

In order to achieve success, first give up the idea that you are “the Doer.” Instead of constantly doing from the mere human or conscious level, become the “Open Door.”

Remember to leave your “Light” on so that you may entertain “Angels unawares.”

When you give up, you are able to step outside of your normal consciousness routines. Doing this allows you access to what you would not normally have, be, or do. The ability to give up and get out of your own way can become your method of choice as the “Court of *First Resort*.”

### **EMBRACE THE CHANGE YOU CAN'T SEE AND WOULD NEVER**

#### **THINK TO LOOK FOR**

If you are looking at a reality where nothing changes, perhaps it is because you are looking through prescription lenses called “nothing changes.” If you set up something that you want to see happen, such as a visualized outcome, and then nothing changes, you are in a reality subset called “nothing changes when I look at it.” In order to change a habitual experience such as this, shift out of your normal frame of reference. Focus

in a new way. Perhaps you could try getting some distance on the problem and then view it as if you were looking at it through a telephoto lens.

***Understanding does not predicate or rely upon patterns generated by past ability.***

5

## **DO NOTHING VERSUS TECHNIQUE**

Surveying all the techniques I have studied, I realize that each taught me how to intend for something to happen and then to hang on for dear life to that desired outcome. I was taught that I must do everything just like the Master/Teacher. It must be done this way—and only by these precise steps. If it is not on this piece of paper, it is not real. I can just hear the Wizard of Oz saying to the Scarecrow that he has all the knowledge, but still needs a procedure.

***You have to let go for something to happen. The more you let go, the more you***

***let things occur.*** If you cannot let go, then you will get what you get for the moment and that may be all that will occur. Yes, you can do some really amazingly powerful things in that moment. And the conditions or problems you work on with your plans and your procedures may or may not return. Whatever you do does not matter.

Whatever you say or do is just a convenient way to ***say or do something to convince***

***yourself that something is happening.***

There is a difference between embracing something so that it becomes you and practicing a technique. When you are trying to do something, you are limited to the reality subset of “what you are trying to do.” Now, the subset of what you are trying to do might be very large; I have at least forty techniques and tools on my Batman utility belt. But remember, *your tools are only as real as you are in the moment.*

## **ALL TECHNIQUES EMPLOY A SPECIAL REFERENCE REALITY OR**

### **MORPHIC FIELD**

Any technique or method employs a perceptual framework from which its rules of the game are fashioned. This framework creates a unique limited theory of special relativity called “this is the way things are.” In other words, somebody had something unique and perhaps even miraculous that occurred in an apparent response to something they “did.” Seeking to recapture the magic, they then made up a procedure or a technique. Next, a set of rules was created that were then taught to a group of students.

Enough people then practiced this technique enough times to create a unique *morphic field*, or consciousness grid. Now everyone who performs that particular technique or method enhances the aura or *morphic field* of that specific system, technique, or belief terrain. This is an example of an *artificially engineered*— or *virtual reality*—template. I will come back to this subject several times in this book.

Matrix Energetics teaches a principle I have labeled the *Quantum Conundrum*.

Stated simply, the principle says, *the less you do, the more you have*. Many erroneously think that in order to be a healer, you have to know stuff or be able to do stuff. If we become mired in the idea that we are actually doing anything, *we can get bogged down with our own self-importance*. There are literally billions of complex interactions that are constantly taking place within a human body. It is an absurdity to suppose that we could, exclusively through our conscious thought or intent, really do anything to influence this ultimate masterpiece of creative engineering. It is somewhat sad that we continue to limit our interactions with others to the realm of the merely human. We are the *Door* to the divine, not the *Doer*.

## **THE LESS YOU DO, THE MORE ACCESS YOU HAVE TO THE ALL**

Here is a miraculous testimony from a Matrix Energetics Certified Master Practitioner concerning the art of doing nothing:

*I had been suffering from an incurable, insufferable, and previously undiagnosable skin disease for almost seven years. I came to a Matrix Energetics seminar approximately three years ago, hoping that Dr. Bartlett would be able to “heal” me.*

*I had seen more than thirty doctors around the world and had tried innumerable treatments without success or relief of my symptoms. I actually worked in the pharmaceutical industry, so I knew all the top experts in dermatology, infectious disease, psychiatry, etc. No one was able to help me. I could not find a cure for what ailed me. So I came to a demonstration of Matrix Energetics because I had heard about this wacky doctor who was doing some crazy things, and I thought maybe, just maybe, he could cure me of my disease.*

*I went to see Dr. Bartlett at this free event and he “demonstrated” with me on stage—and I went into a spontaneous backbend (what is known and referred to in Matrix Energetics as Frequency 18). When I came out of this self-generated posture, I felt like I had a terrible headache. Dr. Bartlett asked me, “Is it a headache or just different?” That shift in perspective really resonated with me, and I signed up for a seminar that was scheduled in a few weeks.*

*I went to the seminar half hopeful for a cure and 90 percent skeptical that anything could possibly change. All weekend long I wanted to tell Dr. Bartlett about my “disease” so he could “heal” me. Instead, a little voice inside my head repeatedly said, “Do not ask Dr. Bartlett for help. The power to heal is within.*

*There is nothing to heal.” I listened to that little voice and did nothing. This was a life-altering decision.*

*Through the course of the weekend seminar, I became congruent with the possibility of potentially having this disease for the rest of my life. I let go. I opened up to the possibility that maybe I did not have a disease after all*

*and that maybe it was just an experience I was choosing to have in a given moment that may have been useful for me.*

*My disease may very well have been the experience I needed to have in order to move into a new state of awareness, one that is freely available to me in the next moment. I realized, through what Dr. Bartlett was teaching, that it was my choice how I perceived what I was experiencing. I chose to let go of my previously limiting set of perceptions, and in the letting go, I was no longer afflicted with the symptoms.*

*Within a month the disease was completely gone, after years and years and years of unsuccessfully “battling” the ailment.*

*Interestingly enough, the symptoms, as I had previously defined them, only reappeared in my life when they were useful. What I mean is that they would appear at times when I was not in my own integrity, such as when I was not comfortable in my own skin, with my own power, and with what was showing up in my life. By being able to notice this, I had a built-in feedback system for my own healing and well-being. I began to see that literally through my skin, my unconscious had given me a very powerful gift that enabled me to grow more comfortably into the person I really am. I have not had my condition’s symptoms return for several years now.*

*The point of my story is that people may think they are reading this book for a particular reason (e.g., to get rid of a problem in their life or to get rid of a disease).*

*But there really may not necessarily be a problem or a disease. It may just be something that is showing up in your perceived reality. With this in mind, see if you can shift your perspective on why something might be showing up. Step into it and allow things to unfold. That is where change happens.*

**— MJ, Matrix Energetics Certified Master Practitioner**

If you think, then you are going to have to be the one doing the work. That is neither as much fun nor as effective as just letting go and trusting. Let go of the need to think or to consciously manipulate this process. The less you do, the more you can accomplish. *Be guided by the Unseen through the*

*Realm of the Unknown* so that in letting go, you can experience a transformation in all aspects of your reality.

## **THE LUMINATOR**

Years ago, I was surfing the Net and saw something about a device called the

“Luminator,” which piqued my interest. This is a technology that actually allows you to see distortions in the energy field and then find the “remedy” that will correct the imbalance. Using the Luminator, all a person needs to do is take a picture of the distortion using a Polaroid Instamatic (600 film) and it shows up.

Interestingly enough, using a digital camera does not work because digital auto-corrects. This is the same principle in action when you are experiencing something “unusual” and your conscious mind says that nothing is happening and auto-corrects to the state of nothing happening. It brings you back to your conscious focus, which says, “I am a body.” You are not a body. You are a body of information.

Eighteen years ago, an engineer and scientist named Patrick Richards created Bio-Liminal Photography and invented the Luminator machine, which consists of a plastic tower that has six glass rings filled with water in it set at different phase angles. It has a big fan on the top and a big fan on the bottom. That’s all it is. He was attempting to create a device that would address the “sick building syndrome”: office workers manifesting vague and unspecified illnesses in buildings that were essentially closed air circulation systems, receiving no fresh-air ventilation. His idea was to improve the quality of the recycled air by eliminating the thermal layers in the room and enabling the efficient distribution of heat.

The Luminator was designed to balance air temperatures from floor to ceiling and from wall to wall for efficient energy management. Richards found that after its installation in an office, staff members began reporting that their general health had improved, including the reduction of lower back pain, eyestrain, stress, and migraine headaches. On further investigation, Richards discovered that as well as balancing the room

temperature, the Luminator altered the magnetic field and changed the available light in the room from incoherent (going in all directions) to coherent, or polarized, light. By removing the thermal layers, you ionize the room and the photons become super-coherent.

When you have a super-coherent external environment and you bring something not so coherent into it and take a picture, the mismatch shows up as distortions on the film. Richards discovered when photographing individuals within this field that the photons were either clear and crisp (coherent) or fuzzy or fractured (incoherent).

After years of further research, he concluded that the photographs were revealing the quantity and quality of the cell light being emitted from individual subjects. A person with strong vitality and lack of inner stress, for example, emitted more photons, thereby creating a more coherent image than an individual with less vitality and greater inner stress.

Once I acquired the Luminator technology, I really began to walk my talk, and I really began to redefine what Matrix Energetics is about. Using the Luminator, I could get instantaneous “real-time” feedback about the effects of what I did or didn’t do in a particular clinical situation. One of the most significant revelations was that the less I did and the less I concentrated on achieving a particular outcome, the more beneficial and powerful the changes in the coherence of the person—as indicated by the changes in the photographs. After seeing this feedback, I began to relax and really live what I had been teaching in Matrix Energetics. I began to embody the art of doing nothing.

Below are some photographs of clients taken with the Luminator that clearly show the mismatch of coherent and incoherent energies. My process for taking the photos was consistent: I put an *X* mark on the floor in my office right against the wall where the patient would stand. I then moved back about eighteen feet and marked another *X* on the floor. That is where I put my stool, always in exactly the same place. I would then take the picture.

### **EXAMPLE 1: BEFORE (BASELINE)**



This woman felt depleted and sore all over. She is a massage instructor, and she had been to seven practitioners before she saw me. Notice that even the background is distorted in the picture, although I did not move the camera. (I do not use a tripod, as it is too much of a hassle with changing the film and other parts.) The scenery is distorted because the field around her is distorting what appears to be the room itself.

The first thing we did after taking the first photos—the baseline photograph—was to make an imprinted remedy. An imprinted remedy is something we can thank German innovation for. The Germans determined that homeopathy was being corrupted by all the electromagnetic frequencies, such as cellular phones, telephone lines, and modern technology. Homeopathy is just an electromagnetic signature, and there is nothing physically actually remaining in the molecules. The Germans understood that the more diluted the formula (the less you do), the more powerful the outcome.

What the Germans did, once they realized there was nothing remaining in the homeopathic remedy, was use lasers and holography to actually imprint the remedies onto software. We are not talking about imprinting radionically; we are talking about the actual imprint of information. Once they imprinted this, then they would place the remedy on a magnetic strip, and the patient would wear the remedy.

So with this patient, I found a “crown chakra remedy” and applied it to her accordingly. When I saw the next Luminator photograph, it was apparent that the crown chakra remedy appeared to do a pretty good job, so we added a universal healing frequency (taught in the seminars) into the crown chakra, and we got this second picture below.

## **EXAMPLE 1: AFTER MATRIX SESSION FREQ. 3 INTO CROWN CHAKRA**



The change is pretty definite. Can you kind of sense the energy radiating out? She felt tremendous. All her symptoms vanished. It took less than a minute.

Here are some additional examples of the Luminator photos that demonstrate coherent and incoherent energies as well as the value of doing as little as possible.

## **EXAMPLE 2: BEFORE (BASELINE)**

Female Client: Obvious phasing distortion on Luminator photograph.

## **EXAMPLE 2: AFTER MATRIX SESSION**

Some distortions still present but much improved.



### **EXAMPLE 3: BEFORE (BASELINE)**

Client's husband: Obvious distortions present on film.

### **EXAMPLE 3: AFTER**

Here is the follow-up Luminator photograph after the wife's treatment. It is important to note that the husband was not treated at all. These photos demonstrate the very real effects of quantum entanglement and the phenomenon of energetic rapport.





**EXAMPLE 4: BEFORE (BASELINE)**

Young male client experiencing a headache when this picture was being taken.

**EXAMPLE 4: AFTER MATRIX SESSION**

Post-Matrix session (five minutes later).



**EXAMPLE 5: BEFORE (BASELINE)**

Female client primarily complaining of feeling really out of it that particular day.

### **EXAMPLE 5: AFTER MATRIX SESSION**

Client reported “feeling like myself again!”



### **LESS IS MORE**

I learned from taking before and after shots with the Luminator that less is more.

Whenever I would attempt to fix the distortion I saw in the photographs, my “after”

shot invariably contained more distortion. Paradoxically, when I did as little as possible and let go of the need for a particular outcome, the distortions in the after shots were generally less distorted and the person’s symptoms would improve greatly or vanish as well. This absolutely revolutionized the way I practice Matrix Energetics. Remember, *the sense of struggle creates the struggle*. Let go and trust that “it is done,” and it usually will be.

**6**

### **THE QUANTUM CONUNDRUM**

When I first started working on this book, I thought about titling it *The Quantum Conundrum*. The more material on alternative science I read, the fishier some of the basic scientific assumptions of quantum physics and its

kissing cousin, the *general theory of relativity*, appeared. I am beginning to suspect that neither theory is correct. Based on objective physical science data from a number of sources, it seems to me that *we have manipulated the physical data to agree with our cherished theories*. There are some very disturbing scientific studies that suggest that quantum theory and real life disagree by a factor of ten to the fortieth magnitude. That is a pretty big “missed” understanding!

The quantum conundrum, as I stated previously, is that *the less you do, the more you have*. This is opposite to how most people live their lives. Most of us have been taught that if we want to get ahead, we have to work harder and longer. I worked as a doctor for twenty years, often six days a week. I can tell you without hesitation that the more you work, the less you have.

To work smarter, not harder, isn't much better. It makes no difference how smart you are; it's really about how creative and innovative you are with your time and energy. So if I were to put this in an equation, it might look something like this: energy multiplied by creativity, divided by time, equals Innovative output:  $ec/t = I$ .

This means that *when you find ways to use more energy in less time, innovative dividends become the well-deserved result*.

*If A is success in life, then A equals x plus y plus z.*

*Work is x; y is play; and z is keeping your mouth shut.*

**Albert Einstein**

**MY RULES: THERE ARE NO RULES, ONLY SUGGESTIONS**

Things cannot change if you are holding a state of “no change.” If you are holding and observing only what is wrong, your concentrated focus can reinforce the problem state or condition. That brings me to my set of rules, which are really more like suggestions. They are not really rules.

The first thing you do is *drop down*. What does this mean? We are used to being in our heads; this is where we live most of the time. We think that our

thoughts control our reality, or at least our perceptions. Actually, thoughts have nothing to do with reality whatsoever. Our thoughts keep us bound in a prism and a prison of what we believe is true. Our perceptual reference frame molds and shapes what shows up for us in the moment. When we stop asking questions and when the mind is silent, we are no longer in our head and we can *drop down* into our heart and into a larger reality.

Imagine a pebble that is tossed into a pond. The waves ripple outward in ever-expanding circles. Now imagine a pebble dropping down your throat and into your chest. You may experience the waves unfolding out from your chest, like the waves in a pond, and into your energy field. From this larger-reality point of reference, there are many more possibilities and realities to perceive.

## **GENERATING THE ALL FROM NOTHING**

One of the greatest secrets of so-called spiritual alchemy is the ability to place intent—and then let go and do nothing.

*Intent can be defined as the creative act of using the many and varied parts of your total conscious experience to define a set of new experiences, realities, or outcomes in your current experience. In order to do this effectively, you must focus your imagination to create a new sensation that will initiate a flow of subtle energy to directly or indirectly influence or manifest the desired events and effects. Thus to create, focus with feeling. 1*

The key ingredient, however, is as stated: after placing intent, let go and do nothing. If you do this, you create a void that then can be filled with your heart's desire. It has been said that "nature abhors a vacuum." One of the ways to fill the vacuum is to look for and seek out examples of others who have mastered what we desire to accomplish or to understand. These individuals are always present in various aspects of our lives as a conceptual mirror for us. You can ask, "Who seems to embody the principle or thing I wish to understand?"

## **HOW TO SHIFT YOUR REALITY REFERENCE FRAME**

When I am doing Matrix Energetics with someone, I shift the focus of my perspective. I have trained myself to allow the focus of my attention to be gently and unconsciously shifted and redirected. I am continually scanning my external and internal environments, looking for subtle clues. This softly held scanning focus allows me to notice whatever catches my attention in the moment. Imagine that your eyes are constantly taking in information, like a computer. As you do this, do not attempt to analyze or judge the information presented to you.

I am allowing the boundary state between what is “real” and “imagined” to become a little blurred or less rigidly defined. Within this blur there are motion, possibility, and unconscious form. In the act of consciously observing “the blur,” my conscious mind/left brain slows it down in order to perceive what I am looking at.

A rule I have adopted is that I don’t have to consciously see what I am working with in order to interact with and change it. The activity of conscious observation breaks down what is essentially a motion picture into innumerable individual slides.

*The conscious mind can only pay attention to one observational frame at a time.*

This neurological process represents the “doing state” within the problem-set, as in,

“There is something wrong, and I have to *do* something about it.” This literally determines the difference between the act of observing and the process of interacting.

The word *process* implies that there are rules, guidelines, and machine-like behaviors involved with what you are doing. A process, once committed to, is a set of least-action pathways. A *least-action pathway* is a neurological response to learning and then embedding a behavior into the unconscious realm of a habitual response.

Some examples of least-action pathways could be things like learning to brake your car when something rolls out in front of you or returning a serve

when playing tennis. These responses, when committed to unconscious reflex, allow us to deal instantly and appropriately with threats or emergencies in our environment. Once we commit these activities to a program, our behavior in similar circumstances becomes immediate and somewhat machine-like. This is a good thing that allows us to respond unconsciously and fluidly, like a well-oiled machine, when appropriate.

For instance, if you have ever studied any martial arts form, you practice a particular punch or kick thousands of times so that your unconscious mind eventually takes over and directs the response. It is very important to not have to remember how to block or punch in a street fight! Of course, a better and more useful least-action pathway is to notice the first signs of danger in your environment so well that you never put yourself in harm's way in the first place.

Least-action pathways are useful for many activities, but not for Matrix Energetics. Every time I look at something consciously and attempt to name it and change it, I am applying the same old tired and worn-out model of Newtonian physics in its emphasis of forcing physical reality to conform to the constructs and expectations of a personal or world model. In other words, the way we notice and choose to construct our reality often constitutes a multitude of least-action pathways in our neurology.

## **BUILDING THE FRAMEWORK FOR A NEW REFERENCE**

When you apply a different *reference frame*, different information filters through into your conscious awareness. Our reference frame, or view of reality, is just something we are making up. An analogy would be taking lenses and changing or rotating them, like in the movie *National Treasure*. In that film, Ben Franklin had invented a pair of spectacles with multiple, interchangeable, colored lenses. Each lens set allowed the viewer to unlock different information otherwise invisible to the naked eye. The green lenses, for example, would always present certain specific types of information or patterns. The red lenses revealed additional data to your senses that previously had been suppressed by your conscious mind.

Whichever lens or viewpoint you choose to utilize will largely determine what you are able or even likely to see. If you want to see more or see

differently, apply the same principle to your conscious mind as it prioritizes and filters “useful”

information. You can decide to implement a new rule that you will notice, say, only 1 percent of what you would have previously considered irrelevant and ignored. You can choose to be more aware of what was, previously to you, largely unconscious.

You can adjust the rheostat of your mind to let in more light and information.

Every model of reality is based on our best-guess perspective. There is a decided difference between the rules for how my reality works and how your reality works.

How do I know that? You are you and I am me, and unless our experiences collide in a seminar together or in the pages of this book, we are separate. That does not suggest that either reality frame is in some way better. It is conceivable, and even likely, that in key instances my approach would be a more useful reference in a particular set of circumstances than yours and vice versa.

If you build houses for a living, for example, your practical experience as a base of reference in that field is likely far more appropriate than mine. If we were both to attempt the construction of a tangible source of shelter, odds are your version wouldn't suck! If I were to build a house, it would likely be full of odd angles and potentially a very leaky edifice. If we are framing a house, constructing a unique sentence structure, or even laying the foundation for the structural components of a new reality, the skill sets are different. In each of these examples, the creation of sensory-specific and individualized reference frames is relevant to the beliefs and contextual reference of the beholder. Not only is beauty in the eye of the beholder, but everything else is as well.

## **THE DOORS OF PERCEPTION: BREAK ON THROUGH TO THE OTHER**

### **SIDE**

*I believe in a long, prolonged, derangement of the senses in order to obtain the unknown.*

## **Jim Morrison**

You alone can ratify the meaning and quality of your experiences and give them your stamp of authenticity. Because we are different, there is a difference between my perception of the way things work and yours. We can choose, through mutual points of agreement, to *construct a special relativity model* that encompasses or joins together what you and I choose to believe or make up.

We can choose to be in rapport and create a mutually shared reality where we decide together what the rules are. We may then formulate what classes of perceptions will drive those rules. Of course, we are free to formulate unique ways to determine the meaning of our experiences within our specially created reality subset. Matrix Energetics is an example of just such a special-case reality subset structure, because I made it up. Together we reinforce it by choosing to share in a set of mutually held beliefs and experiences. We have created and given life to Geppetto's quantum puppet Pinocchio.

With enough individuals sustaining the consciousness of our special case reality, such as Matrix Energetics, it functions consistently and reliably. When this field of consciousness reaches critical mass, a unique morphic field resonance has been created. *Once this threshold is achieved, the system of thought or belief becomes self-generating and sustaining: "It's alive!"* Love your dreams enough that you begin to embody them. I have!

In order to be able to change a long-standing condition, pattern, or behavior, it is important to *learn to focus your awareness on the information or state that has a feeling response attached to it*. When I talk about feelings, I am not equating them with emotions. I am referring to becoming aware of a feeling response, which starts simply by *noticing what you notice*.

## **DOORWAYS OF PERCEPTION EXERCISE**

Let me give you a metaphorical example. Imagine that you have an unwanted pattern of behavior you would like to change. Now imagine that before you are ten doors lined up in a row. Each one of those doors, when opened, contains some pattern or type of information. The information behind an individual door may or may not be relevant to your needs. The way to discern if you want to go through a particular door will be based on what information you get—what you notice—but not how you feel.

When you open the first door, you feel or sense nothing, so you close it. The second door you open has a warm feeling exuding from within and there is a bright but soft light shining there. This is a definite possibility, you think—mark that one for possible further exploration. When you try the handle of the third door, it won't open for you. Unconcerned, you move on to the next door.

The fourth door is a soft green color. The frame feels rich and smooth; you notice you are more relaxed than you were a moment ago. Just touching this door generates a feeling of warmth and welcome deep inside you. You get it. This door has your name on it, and you decide. Without hesitation you somehow know that you could walk through this door and find whatever answer or help you need.

Somehow the green door resonates unconsciously with the terrain of your deep inner nature. That's what I mean by "feeling it," not by being in an emotional state.

If you were to analyze or calibrate the reasons for your choice, what are some clues you would notice? Let's start with your physiological responses. "Hmmm . . . I feel calmer inside, like my anxiety level has dropped way down. My heart rate is slower and steadier. I seem to be breathing more slowly and more deeply. I feel very relaxed yet somehow inexplicably more alert and refreshed."

All this physiological change resulted from just thinking about moving through the green door. The physiological clues provided are definitely helping you make a good choice in the moment.

We learn to make sensory-based generalizations about the nature of doors. We form an unconscious database about what we discover each time we encounter a new one. Over the passage of time, having seen and gone through many doors, we create a *least-action pathway* where doors are concerned. That way, even if we encounter a submarine hatch or a hobbit hole, based on our previous encounters with doors, we can still figure out how to move through it. This is necessary so we don't have to rediscover the principle of doors afresh every time we encounter a new one!

In Matrix Energetics, when you *notice what you notice* and respond to the clues provided without questioning or thinking about it, you have made a good choice in the moment.

The other way to deal with new information is to open your eyes and mind and accept whatever you see, feel, and experience in the moment. ***Trust that whatever***

***shows up is useful in some way.*** In order to create a new reality or to bring miracles into our lives, we can begin by learning to see the things in our lives in a new way.

We create the aspects of our reality that we come to accept as a part of the fabric of our beliefs, expectations, and experiences. We, to no small degree, make up the tapestry of energetic patterns that we call "our world."

7

## **THE SCIENCE OF MADE-UP STUFF**

In scientific research, each new approach to reality generates more mathematics.

When approaches are tested and experimented, the physicists and math geniuses find things that do not match their model. No problem; they decide to just generate more equations and theories. When experiments are inconsistent with the data, they either fudge the data or create new equations to match their experimental results.

For example, if you take a piece of matter and accelerate it to the speed of light, according to the equation it becomes infinitely heavy the faster it gets. We don't know if this really happens, but the equation  $E = mc^2$  suggests that it should. So if the results of the equation don't balance out on both sides of the equal sign, or the real-life results don't make sense, scientists just take one part and cancel out the other part so that it comes out OK. I'm not making this up. Mathematicians even have a name for this process: *renormalization*. Quantum physicist Richard Feynman called it "dippy hocus-pocus."<sup>1</sup>

## **THE UNIVERSE CAN REORGANIZE JUST TO BE CONGRUENT WITH**

### **OUR IDEAS**

If you create a reality that says "this plus this plus this equals no miracles in my life," then that is the equation you work from. If you work from that equation, it is no more real than  $E = mc^2$ , which, by the way, was not even in the equation Einstein submitted in the first place. Because Einstein was dyslexic, he had some terms backward.<sup>2</sup> Einstein was so dyslexic that he stuttered. As a little boy, he stuttered so badly that he developed a habit of saying a sentence first in his head and then saying it out loud. Sometimes, though, he forgot whether he had said it on the inside before he said it on the outside, so he would often say it out loud twice. Because of this quirk, people often thought he was dense or stupid.

For many people, their concept of Einstein is akin to an archetypal image of God.

Einstein had the white hair and the whole "bigger than thou" thing going—even the unzipped trousers. He simply wasn't paying much attention to this world. He was somewhat like John von Neumann, another famous mathematician, who would claim that trees stepped out and hit his car as he was driving. (He liked to drink.)<sup>3</sup>

This is all true. You can do the research if you like. But I have done it for you. You can trust me on some of it. Or maybe even all of it.

If you set up a rule or if you set up a way of observing something and then you set up the rules for how it is observed, then you are always within your rule set. So when Einstein said that nothing could travel faster than the speed of light, what he meant was that nothing could be observed to be traveling faster than the speed of light because the tool we make our observation with is light itself. Therefore, light cannot travel faster than itself. This does not mean that thought does not travel faster than light. This does not mean that *torsion fields* Soviet physicists worked with in the 1980s are not much faster than light. The problem is that once you analyze something and break it down, then you must observe it from your rules for reality.

There are two processes our brains use in order to perceive, transform, or classify information: *serial processing* and *parallel processing*. Serial processing is linking one thing to another to another to another. It is like differential equations in trigonometry class—not that I would know, because I flunked algebra. The only reason I became a doctor of chiropractic is because the program didn't require me to take any physics classes that required complicated math. Parallel processing involves at least two processes occurring simultaneously, and within the body, it is the neural integration that underlies complex mental processes.

*Do not worry about your difficulties in Mathematics.*

*I can assure you mine are still greater.*

### **Albert Einstein**

Even the great Einstein occasionally had problems with math. He would come up with these equations that made no damn sense. But he would get the right answer.

Or he would have the right equation and the wrong answer. He was dyslexic, remember. So what Einstein would do is piece together the best parts. He was such an important figure with the crazy hair and all, an icon, that people just tended to want to believe him.

*One of the postulates of special relativity* is that nothing in our observed universe can travel faster than the speed of light.<sup>4</sup> Well, do you know why you cannot go past the speed of light? Because light is the tool you are measuring with! This is the reason. Part of the electromagnetic spectrum includes light. If light is the tool you are using to perform your measurements, then all your measurements of velocity are performed in relation to that factor. That is why Einstein said nothing travels faster than the speed of light from a relative point of measurement. He never meant to suggest that you cannot go faster than the speed of light. You simply cannot *measure* it.

## **SPECIAL RELATIVITY OF CONSCIOUSNESS**

Whenever you artificially describe something with enough detail and conviction, you create a warp bubble or “special case relativity” where it exists. The science is

“real”—until it’s not real. The model of your reality holds true until your experiences contradict it too much. When met with experiences that are contradictory to your model, you will either suppress the information into your subconscious or form a new model that includes the contradictory experiences.

In order for us to interact, we each have our relativity of consciousness warp bubble. You have yours, and I have mine—and then we can create something unique if we agree together. In order to interface with someone else’s reality bubble, what you can do is allow for the creation of a unique bubble of reality that encodes for your experience and theirs as well, and creates a new special relativity where both rules apply or don’t.

In other words, things that are useful can stay and things that are not can cancel each other out. That allows us something called *energetic rapport*, where special kinds of things can then occur. When we are connected in this way, we have created a special unified field of consciousness. Actually, what we have done is create a special relativity that through the heart accesses the unified field of consciousness.

At the subatomic level, physical reality itself is reduced to a field of probabilities that can be manipulated by the mere act of observation. Minute changes in momentum and trajectory of subatomic particles can propagate to cause far greater physical effects in the phenomenal universe.<sup>5</sup>

## **PARTICLE PHYSICS AND THE INDOCTRINATION OF SEPARATION**

The building blocks of our concrete world belong to the realm of *particle physics*.

Do you ever wonder why it is that scientists keep smashing the atom into smaller bits? The number of new particles that are created and discovered from this process of scientific deconstruction is amazing. We break things down, look at the scattered pieces, and assign a name and function to them. Have you ever taken a toy, such as a little red fire engine truck, and then smashed it with a big hammer?

If you hit a thing hard enough, parts scatter everywhere. If the fire truck was plastic, it shattered into little fragments. What if you have all these little fragments and you name them all: that is a prusson, this is a lickamajick, this is a Klingon, and so on. Have you ever tried to put these pieces back together after you smashed them? It is pretty difficult to do, if possible at all. Of course, your mom or dad probably just called your experiments a mess!

I think things are simpler than that. I think that everything is just spirit and whatever you name it becomes that. So yes, maybe *virtual particles* did not exist until they did. Once we thought of them, however, then it's too late to take them back. A scene from *Ghostbusters* makes this point. When they were trying *not* to think of anything at all, what showed up was the big Stay Puft Marshmallow Man, which actor Dan Akroyd's character defended by saying, "I tried to think of the most harmless thing. Something I loved from my childhood. Something that could never ever possibly destroy us. Mr. Stay Puft!"<sup>6</sup> Well, your beliefs are like that too, except maybe not quite so sticky.

Why do we think that tearing something to pieces and then analyzing its parts will tell us how it really functions? I remember dissecting a starfish in high school biology lab. I didn't bother with the instruction sheet; I just took it apart with my knife. I learned nothing from this experience. Fortunately, I did not progress to dissecting the goldfish I had at home. I had a far more exciting encounter with a starfish at SeaWorld when I gently cradled one in my palms. I could feel and appreciate the unique beauty of the life-form nestled within my hands. I cheered along with everyone else in the theater when Elliot in Steven Spielberg's classic movie *E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial* saved the frogs in biology class from imminent dissection. This led to the formation of "physicist" Spielberg's theorem, "Save the Frog—Kiss the Girl!"

The error that occurs within a strictly mechanistic framework is when we see and classify. We seem to think that by breaking an organism or an idea down to its component parts, we have understood what it is really about. There is a huge difference between smelling the odor of formaldehyde while stooping over the dissection tray to peer at a lifeless amphibian and catching and holding a live frog.

Have you ever caught several frogs in an enclosure and cheered them on as they

"raced" for the finish line? I did this with terrapins in my backyard when I was a young boy. It's not as exciting as watching frogs leap for the goal's end, but you get the idea: you learn more about what constitutes life by actually observing living examples.

In Matrix Energetics, we teach people how to turn frogs into princes. It is the difference between accepting someone's model and actually experiencing it for yourself and realizing that it is not at all what you have been told. It is the difference between stagnant theory and vitalism.

Scientists deal with the classification of inert nouns. "Phylum and forget'em," I say. *Life is a process*. The eminent physicist Werner Heisenberg said, "Atoms are not things."<sup>7</sup> Physical science writer and physicist Nick Herbert extrapolated from Heisenberg's original statement when he said, "People are not things in the same way that atoms are not

things.”<sup>8</sup> A body or person is composed structurally of atoms, the conceptual building blocks of all nature. The atom is composed of electrons and the nucleus, which consists of protons and neutrons. But get this: an electron doesn’t actually exist except for when it is observed. When we look at it, only then does the electron assume the semblance of a fixed and stable orbit.

When not being observed, *the electron exists in the form of a probability cloud.*

This cloud is composed of all the probable orbits it could be in before the act of measurement fixes it into a stable orbit around the nucleus. Since we humans at the atomic level are composed of atoms, ***we can be said to consist of a series of states***

***composed from an infinite set of oscillating possibilities.*** The ability to let go of our fixed attitudes—our reference frame—can elevate our perceptual platform from which we judge what is possible and what is not allowed. A little flexibility of thought can do much to alleviate or at least mitigate much of what we find in the human condition.

It is important to have fun, because when you are having fun, you start to make virtual particles called “fun stuff” that are really useful. Virtually and literally, *you start to have a good time.* Why is that? Because when you make virtual particles called fun stuff, you actually start to change the orbital spin of the electrons that make up the patterns of neurochemistry in your brain and nervous system. When you start to make better neurotransmitters, you can more readily experience altered states of fun and joy. And you might experience *endolphins* as well as *endorphins*!

Do you know what theoretical physicist John Archibald Wheeler (Feynman’s teacher) said about the universe? He called it “a meaning software,” located “who knows where.”<sup>9</sup> Now, how many of you think he was both confused and not confused? He realized that the inherent order he saw in the universe went way beyond any probability that it was put there by chance. Allegedly, a number of years ago, Wheeler had a health scare that included a near-death experience. Wheeler left this body and “experienced” the universe. When he came back, he said there was

something he had to share because he might die. His takeaway message was “if there’s one thing in physics I feel more responsible for than any other, it’s this perception of how everything fits together.”<sup>10</sup> I think that he apparently realized that the mathematical models do not get to the heart of the matter, which is the awareness of the many as the All.

*As far as the laws of mathematics refer to reality, they are not certain; and as far as they are certain, they do not refer to reality.*

**Albert Einstein**

**8**

## **THE POWER OF COMMAND VERSUS**

## **CONTROL**

Whereas *Newtonian physics* emphasizes force, *quantum physics* emphasizes finesse.

There is a big difference between control and command. Control assumes that you know what is going on, that you have all the factors, and that you can do something against something in order to make something happen. This is that analytical left brain saying, “I can do this.” No, it can’t. Excuse me—it can’t.

Command issues forth from the heart. To command Life is your birthright. When you observe your life in this way, without judgment, *collapse of the wave function* occurs in ways that are not based upon the probability of what usually happens.

They instead reconfigure around the thought “What could happen in the next moment?” Does that sound useful? This is physics too. It really is.

Command does not involve control. When you are in command, you are not trying to make something happen. Have you ever read the passage in Isaiah in the Bible where it says, “Concerning the work of my hands command ye me”? The concept of command has to do with stepping into a space of the

heart where you are unified with the field of all possibility. From that hallowed and sacred space, when you say, “Let go,” *it is done*. Words become virtual cups of light, patterns of information. The way that they are woven literally creates a magical *node of possibility* that opens up the *dimensional capabilities* of your awareness to experience other states, other things, and other places. This concept will become increasingly obvious to you as we continue through this book together.

*Thus saith the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me.*

### **Isaiah 45:11**

## **DROP DOWN, PLACE INTENT, AND LET GO**

I want to emphasize something very important. If you were to come to a seminar, you might observe things that frankly look a little like a quantum evangelical revival. What you would apparently see me doing doesn't really involve the state of me doing anything at all. This is important because *the act of doing creates resistance to what could happen in the very next moment*. In order to do something, I have to gear up to do *work*. If I am going to dig a hole with a shovel, what do I have to do? First, I have to have a shovel. Then I have to decide where to dig. Then I have to feel the ground and feel how hard the ground is. Then I have to calculate how much *force* I am going to need to use in order to make my hole. Does this make sense? All this is conscious calculation.



It is much different when you just *drop down* into the experience. Then there is nothing to do, nothing to be. *There is nothing to change*. It is that state of merely noticing what you notice without providing judgment. That free-flowing state is so different from “holistic health,” or disease, or disease care, or technique, or conditions of treatment, or conditional analysis of conditions, or even transactional analysis of conditions (trance-

actual, for you psychiatrists out there reading this who have already diagnosed me).

*There is no difference between states of matter and matter-of-fact states.* It is a matter of the *informational content of the field* or spin of the electrons that causes something to react or respond in a particular way. The act of observing something instantly changes it at the quantum level. You are composed of light patterns held in informational templates; this is what you are. Learning Matrix Energetics is not only easy, but it represents concepts and abilities that are fundamental to your reality. It is your attempts to do something, your need to observe something, and your desire to be powerful that keep you from experiencing those things. *Drop down. Place intent.*

*Let go.*

***Drop down*** implies entering a state of altered possibility where other rules, or no rules, can then apply.

***Place intent*** is a concept that is very often misunderstood. We think intent means that we decide what we want, and then we try really hard to get it by doing affirmations or visualizations. Does this sound familiar to you? Doesn't it also sound like a lot of work? And why do you have to do it so much? Because you do not think you deserve it. Because you do not think you already have it. You are already in the relationship with the things you want. You do not understand that they are indivisible and cannot be separated. It is your desire to have the thing that amplifies the state of not having it. Does that make sense? Play with intent as you would play any other game; intent is simply another virtual reality simulation.

***Let go*** is really quite a straightforward concept: you have to let go for something to happen. The more you let go, the more you let things occur.

Bruce Lee taught three key principles or rules to his students: (1) *Absorb what is useful.* That means to notice what you notice in the moment. (2) *Discard the classical mess.* This means what I was just talking about—about smashing up all these particles and then trying to put the universe back together and make sense of it.

It does not make sense. Discard the classical mess, the rules that are proscribed in your reality, and your prescription for the way things are. Finally, he said to employ the third rule: (3) *No way as way*. This means that in the moment, you want to apply the rules that show up, but in no way limit your self-expression to only those rules.

Entertain other patterns or possibilities as well. You can become a shape-shifter like



a shamanic chameleon. You can learn how to transform your reality by breathing in one reality set and breathing out another. It is not as difficult as it sounds; and if it does not sound difficult, that is because it is not.

## **EXPAND YOUR QUANTUM CONSCIOUSNESS**

One of the useful ideas in quantum physics is that this is a participatory reality. We are making stuff up. The way we choose the perceptions or the parameters of our reality defines what we are able to experience in the moment. Now, here is the problem. If things have to make sense, then you have a very narrow, limited set of possible outcomes defined for you. What if things could not make sense and make sense at the same time? When you start opening up the parameters of what is possible, you allow for your normal expectations as well as that little bit extra.

## **QUANTUM PHYSICS AND COMPLEX NUMBERS**

In physics, in order to describe the collapse of the wave function, scientists use what are called *complex conjugate numbers*. This complex conjugate, when multiplied by itself, always produces a real number as the product of the operation. For example, take the complex conjugate  $(3 + i) - (4 - i) = 12$ . The imaginary number,  $i$ , is understood to represent the state of all the possibilities that exist beyond the domain of time and space before an act of observation occurs. In the act of observing and from a state of all possible outcomes, one specific action occurs. This result, in our consciousness domain, represents what we notice or what appears to be the end result.

## **ALLOW FOR GRACE IN YOUR LIFE'S EQUATION**

Those of you who have read my first book have heard the story I'm about to tell, and I want to add some quantum insights I've had around this strange event that happened to me.

It was just after four o'clock in the morning on a bitterly cold January day in Bozeman, Montana. The wind was blowing hard and a solid sheet of glistening snow was steadily falling. It was not an ideal day for a six-hour road trip to beautiful, rustic Missoula. But my contacts there had booked a solid weekend of clients. I was quite likely to make more money during this weekend than I had made the entire previous week—and we really needed the income. In my previous career as a professional musician, I never missed a single gig—and I wasn't going to start now. The show must go on. I wearily pulled on my jeans and sweater and went to the closet to get my heavy coat and snow boots.

As I was leaving, my wife called out to me, "Be careful of black ice!" I had never seen black ice and didn't believe in it. Shrugging off her caution and resolving not to be late, I put my foot down on the gas pedal and my vintage 389 c.i. engine and surged uncertainly down the deserted highway. I was glad that the roads were empty and anticipated being able to make up some time on the long stretches ahead.

I barreled headlong toward my destiny at a speed in excess of 80 miles an hour.

With the great time I was making, I'd be in Missoula soon, I thought. Just outside Butte, I encountered the very phenomenon that my wife was always worrying about: the legendary, slippery, and all-but-invisible black ice. Not only did I belatedly discover the reality of its existence, but the patch with my name on it was on an icy bridge just outside Butte's city limits. My tires started across the patch of slippery death that had formed in the center of the bridge. Horrified, I felt my wheels begin to skid out of control. In a panic, I took my foot off the gas and gently pumped the brake pedal, but I was moving too fast.

That old car of mine just had one of those front lap straps as a seat belt. There were no fancy air bags or antilock brakes and virtually no chance I was going to survive this oncoming crash, barring divine intervention. I frantically applied my brakes more forcibly, fishtailing the back end of my car, so that I was now racing head-on for the bridge pylons. I looked down at my speedometer seconds before impact and noted that it showed a crisp and lethal 65 miles an hour. I was staring death in the face and it was grinning back at me. Accepting my fate and abandoning all illusion of control, I put my hands up to my face and screamed with all my heart,

“Archangel Michael, help!” And then I hit the pillars of the bridge.

There was a blinding flash of electric blue light—and then nothing. I felt as if I were floating, suspended in a big blue bubble of protective energy so thick that no harm could befall me. Archangel Michael is the defender of the faithful and the protector of the innocent. I believe in the concept of Grace, and perhaps my earthly allotment of this precious quality was not yet used up. Whatever the reason, I found myself sitting in my still-running car, in the middle of nowhere on an icy stretch of bridge—completely unharmed!

Finally, after several minutes, I recovered enough to take stock of my situation.

Trying to open the driver’s side door, I discovered that it was tightly crumpled, so I had to roll down the window and climb out. Once outside the car, I was shocked to see that my whole front end was crushed up toward my windshield. I realized that it was the dead of winter on a deserted, snowy road. No one else appeared to have been so foolish as to drive in these conditions. If my car were not in running condition, I would probably perish anyway, as the wind chill had driven the temperature down to around 15 degrees below zero. I wondered if my life had been saved from certain death so that I could slowly freeze to death.

Resigned to deal with whatever came next, I climbed back through the car’s window, slid behind the wheel, and put the car in reverse. I held my breath in fearful anticipation. The wheels spun a little bit and then found some

traction on the slippery road. I backed up and threw the transmission into drive, continuing on my



appointed rounds. I arrived without further incident at my destination and went to work.

When it was time for the return journey home, I pulled into a gas station and filled up the gas tank. Other than that, I could do little else to check the serviceability of my vehicle, as the hood of my car was so thoroughly crumpled and mangled that I doubted it would ever open again. Trusting that divine intervention was working well so far, I decided to stay the course and drove home to Bozeman, silently entreating the class of Angels who doubled as car mechanics to hold the car together just a little while longer. I pulled into my driveway at home, and just before I could turn off the key, the car's engine seized up and sputtered to a stop for the last time. The car was such a total wreck that I later had to have it towed away for scrap metal. Once again, my Guardian Angels had come through on my behalf, and gratitude doesn't begin to cover how I felt—and continue to feel!

If you hit black ice on a bridge at 65 mph as I did, it creates a very interesting equation in consciousness. If your rule set for an encounter looks something like “a car traveling at 65 mph times black ice times bridge pylon, magnified by the force of the impact,” then the output on the other side of the equal sign could add up to the probability that you might be dead or at least seriously injured.

If your equation has enough flexibility to allow for the presence of a hidden variable, such as angels, the balance of the equation is upset in the direction of less predictability. The real-world outcome could be a lot safer and more pleasant for you. The same equation with one variable added can make the difference between life and death, loved gained or lost, or success and failure. Try inserting the variable

***faith in things hoped for and belief in things not seen*** into your personal life equation as an experiment.

In my equation in the paragraphs above, the real numbers represent the speed of my vehicle, the iciness of the bridge, the loss of traction coefficient, and the force of impact. By the introduction of an imaginary integer into this equation, the imaginary or unseen number  $i = \textit{Angel}$ , a different end result is obtained. The hidden variable could be said to represent the quality of faith in the unseen.

If believing in Angels is too big a quantum leap for you, don't accept that concept. Whatever you believe comprises the filters of your perceptions. How you choose to see things governs what shows up. For some of us, even the statement "I am the water of eternal life," spoken by the master Jeshua, could be taken to imply that God is always raining on your parade (especially if you live in Seattle!).

Embrace the drop of mercy that becomes the ocean of life, love yourself, and transform your reality.

9

## **WAIT A MINUTE. WHAT JUST HAPPENED**

### **HERE?**

The *uncertainty principle*, formulated by Heisenberg, says you can't measure a quantum particle's momentum and its position simultaneously. If you track its position, you lose track of its velocity. If you track its velocity, you lose track of its position. My guides showed me something about that and why we cannot detect the particle's velocity and position simultaneously. What we observe with our physical senses is based upon the information filtered from our perceptions to our conscious mind. The left brain analyzes the raw data and then decides what information is relevant to our continued survival; all other data is suppressed. Though perceived or recorded, it does not pass the gatekeeper of our left brain and remains hidden in the dark recesses of our subconscious awareness.

*Natural science does not simply describe and explain nature; it is part of the interplay between nature and ourselves.*

## Werner Heisenberg

The conscious mind performs like a shutter; it takes very fast pictures and then places the information together seamlessly so you don't notice—just like movies, where the action is not actually a flow of movement but a series of static slides. If we are looking at an object or information, we can only consciously use less than 0.01 percent of the visible *electromagnetic spectrum* our eyes can detect. We cannot visually detect simultaneous channels of information because our left brain processes information in a “series” format, one slide at a time.

That is why we say that we can only process seven (plus or minus two) bits of data a second. The process we use to analyze sensory data works only in a linear fashion; it is very fast but only able to present one slide or slice of information at a time. Our unconscious mind is a *parallel processor* and can view millions of bits of data in the same second. Its conclusions are just not available to our normal conscious state.

That is where the measurement problem in quantum physics comes in. In order to analyze the data that our experiments generate, we have to use our conscious mind.

Our left-brain awareness as a serial processor means that we can never see more than one perspective about the data at a given second. In addition, when we “look,”

we entangle the process of our observations with the object or subject of our perceptions.

Our conscious mind is like Jack Nicholson's character in *A Few Good Men*. Your conscious mind says “I want the truth!” You can almost hear Jack as your subconscious mind taunts, “You can't handle the truth!”<sup>1</sup> Jack is guarding the border, and in order to cross over, we have to change the side of the fence we are on.

In order to perceive multidimensionally, we must use the right brain's parallel processor. However, in order to interpret the data we receive, we must analyze it from the perspective of the left brain.

The uncertainty principle only applies to our conscious inability to observe both an object's momentum and its position. Our subconscious mind can do it easily—while standing on the head of a pin and with an infinite number and variety of Angels! That is one of the best arguments for cultivating the ability to access altered states of consciousness. Since at the quantum level the act of observation changes the activity of the observed and you are composed of patterns of light, you can change your outcomes (and affect your income as well) by learning to perceive through the eyes of altered perception.

The effect of looking into the world of quantum physics is undeniable and drastic. It collapses possibility into actuality. *Unless you change your rule set, you get the actuality that there is no possibility that things will change.* This is because you have set up things in your life in such a way that they have to conform to the way you think they should. This is not at a conscious level. It is at an unconscious level. However, *it is consciously driven by the way you notice and perceive* in your physical reality.

By performing a measurement at the quantum level, we change what we are measuring. The act of observing at that level changes it. So if I notice that something feels “stuck” or “rigid,” I am not making a judgment; I am making an observation. If I make an observation and then ask, “What would it be like if it were different?”, I can notice that instead, and the outcome can be quite different. That question is open-ended—and open-ended process accesses the “*not* state of judgment.”

In 1970 Lizzie James interviewed Jim Morrison of The Doors, discussing life in general and how he chose to live it. The interview was published ten years after his death in *Creem* magazine in an article titled “Ten Years Gone.”

*The most important kind of freedom is to be what you really are. You trade in your reality for a role. You trade in your sense for an act. You give up your ability to feel, and in exchange, put on a mask. There can't be any large-scale revolution until there's a personal revolution, on an individual level. It's got to happen inside first. You can take away a man's political freedom and you won't hurt him—unless you take away his freedom to feel.*

*That can destroy him. . . . That kind of freedom can't be granted. Nobody can win it for you.*<sup>2</sup>

Your heart knows the difference between what is true and what is not. Your heart can judge because your heart is the only place where judgment makes any sense.

That is where “ye judges righteous judgment” because you are not analyzing. When you are analyzing, you are always in a polarity or a duality with what you are trying to make sense of. It is either good or bad. It is either black or it is white. It is evil or it is absolute good. It is Angel or it is devil. It can never be both or neither—and that is the same attitude largely held in science.

## **COHERENCE AND DECOHERENCE AS SELECTIVE PERCEPTION**

The concept of the collapse of the wave function assumes that beyond the domain of time and space there are infinite possibilities. Anything can occur. The laws of quantum probability imply that *the act of observing something causes it to cohere into what we expect to see*. When a specific outcome is chosen or observed, all the other possibilities simultaneously decohere in reference to this particular space-time domain. What we do not expect to see does not occur. There is essentially a precise formula that determines what is possible to manifest in your world. What you expect, you will experience. When you begin to loosen your rule set concerning what is probable, you will begin to see a lot of other things. Your “Reality Software”

will receive a perceptual upgrade.

## **THE DOUBLE-SLIT EXPERIMENT**

Physicists perform an experiment that by now many of us have heard of but bears repeating. They take two slits just wide enough for one electron to pass through and an electron beam gun, and they open one slit and fire the gun at a photographic emulsion on the far wall. When they calibrate the result from the photographic plate, they notice an equal distribution of

particles, which is what they expected to observe as an outcome for the experiment.

However, when they open both slits, the electron appears to interfere with itself and go through both slits at once. Then it creates light and dark bands. What is that?

Where the dark bands occur, it interferes with itself and cancels itself out. Where there are light bands, the waves multiply together, creating a summation potential (real physics) and it gets bigger, broader, and brighter. So the double-slit experiment is basically this: You have two slits, and you close them off. You have an electron beam that shoots one electron through the slit. Behind that you have a wall that has a device such that every time the particle hits the wall it goes “ding” and it also has an emulsion (a film or photographic plate) so that it records the pattern.

Well, here is the interesting thing: When you open one and observe it, it does exactly as you would expect. There is a very tight distribution of particle points.

However, if you open both at the same time, something weird happens. The particle seems to split in two and interfere with itself, creating wave patterns on the film.

When the scientists are just observing the experiment, it remains a particle.

If you are a parent, you know firsthand something about how this experiment can play out in real life. As soon as the physicists were not observing the path of the electron and both slits were open for the particle to choose, it chose to misbehave—just as your kids might. So you would get an interference pattern consisting of light and dark bands on the photographic plate.

John von Neumann, the famous mathematician, was brought in as an expert to try to explain the baffling results of the double-slit experiment. He determined that the presence of a hidden variable was the only possible rational explanation. According to Thomas J. McFarlane’s paper “Quantum

Physics, Depth Psychology, and Beyond,” von Neumann went on to state that the x factor was human consciousness!

He said that the reason that the photon or the electron interfered with itself is that our consciousness (that of the human being) actually caused the collapse of the wave function, which created the difference between whether it was viewed as a particle or a wave.

In other words, when we were not looking at it or expecting to see something, it behaved as if it were a wave and could interfere with itself. However, when we observed it and made measurements, expecting it to behave in a certain way, it did that. So based upon the idea that we are composed of photons, the act of measuring can cause the collapse of the wave function and change the actual structure of how a human being is put together. Essentially then, our universe is made up. Basically, consciousness is the x factor that is left out of all the experiments, but it explains most of the effects we see in quantum physics.

You can imagine complex patterns of photons interacting that together would compose a unique complex called a wave function. How your perceptual bias is set up defines the wave function of possibility that you can embrace and accept as an outcome. *The possibility wave is based upon your consciousness model.* What that means is that if you expand your model for your personal reality, your results change. They change exponentially.

These possibility waves are transcendent potentials, which are manifested by *freedom of choice*. You choose how things show up by the way you observe. Your observation or measurement creates the *collapse of the wave function*. Physicists are attached to this word to denote quantum measurement because of the image of spread-out waves suddenly collapsing to a localized particle; that’s what it looks like.

When you stop trying to do something is when the change occurs. When you are trying to make something happen, you are in a particle-based reality with the information or object under consideration. When you go *whoosh* and expand your awareness from within the laboratory of your heart up and

out, you are momentarily released from conscious limitations and transcend the barrier of the space-time domain.

In the next moment you will come crashing back from wavelike transcendence into particle-based reality. A portion of your consciousness, which is neither particle nor wave, can track both wave functions of probability and the particle-based reality simultaneously. And then the Angels and you can take up the tune and dance. Over time, the music becomes easier to perceive and, with practice, the dance becomes more fun!

When you collapse the wave function, it collapses from a state of smeared-out possibility into a state of definiteness. All you might need to do, if you have pain or a problem, is realize that your expectations are based on your perceptual bias. Your problem is always there, in part because you assume that it will be, so it shows up in the same way every time. In the next moment, it can be totally different. You assume it can't because physical reality appears to be unchanging. That is the rational assumption based on a closed-system model. It's a lie!

Your experience of personal reality is a completely open system. ***Changing how***

***you perceive changes the object of your observation, which can change your***

***outcome right now!*** It appears not to change because you have set it up in such a way that it has to conform to the way you think it should. This is not assessed or realized by you at a conscious level. It is consciously driven by the way you notice and perceive in your physical reality. Your habitual patterns of perception create the template from which you derive your daily experience.

Below is a very recent post from a seminar participant. Just by reading this book you are in the morpheic field for the types of experiences described here. You do not really need to go to a seminar (although they are a lot of fun). I used this example because it was fun and instantaneous!

*I went to my first seminar at the suggestion of my friend Suzanne. I had met her less than a month before and seriously debated going. Could I afford it? Was this stuff even possible? Ultimately I went, and I could not have made a better decision.*

*On Friday night, after seeing people fall over on stage and becoming somewhat concerned as to where they had “gone,” I met Dr. Bartlett. He walked up to me and immediately identified my scoliosis. Within the next few seconds, I felt my spine leave my body—I’ll say that again: my spine left my body—and come back completely different. After noting that some of my internal organs were jammed up in my rib cage, my lungs were not functioning at full capacity, and my hip was out of alignment, he told me to see how I felt. Still being hardwired to not really believe that such changes could take place in less than two minutes, I tried to walk away.*

*That didn’t work the way I had planned because my legs were now the consistency of jello.*

*After learning how to walk with a new spine (and staring in the mirror at what used to be a curved mess), I went home with the biggest smile ever seen. The next day I met a lot of great people, and I learned that a lot of things I’ve always suspected are actually true and that there are ways to quantify them. The day after that, I learned there’s no need to quantify them . . . they just are.*

*So far, I’ve practiced Matrix Energetics on several people with encouraging results. The world is completely different to me, as I’m sure it is to many of you.*

*Going to a seminar is the best thing you can do for yourself, your friends, and your family. If anyone is on the fence about going to a seminar, don’t hesitate. GO! You will not be the same when you leave, and that is just fine!*

— **AM**

**10**

**COLLAPSING THE WAVE**

When we observe, we collapse the electron's wave to localize at one place. Between our observations, the wave function spreads out into transcendent possibility. This is why I say **drop down** out of your head into your heart and enter an altered state.

**Place intent:** "I'd like this to change!" This is really all the intent you need. When you access the feeling of a new outcome even for a moment, the feeling state of open expectation can be a quantum prayer.

**Let go:** Come out of space-time for a fraction of a second. In the next moment, you are instantly back, but your experience of reality can completely change. When you choose to observe your life from an expanded perspective, you collapse the wave patterns of your "same old, same old" existence into a new dimension of possibility. This creative act of Divine or Higher Will, combined with the limitless potential held within the space of your Sacred Heart, can encode and create a new you in the making!

## **THE FUNCTION OF WEIGHTED PROBABILITY**

Trust the heart's wisdom. When you focus on what could happen, it becomes a function of weighted probability, which is generated and sustained by the way you have chosen to observe things. **Awareness, filtered through the medium of your beliefs, generates your experience.** No one sees the same event in exactly the same way. We are on the inside looking out. If you don't like how your life is playing out, let go of the need to control it. Drop into your heart center and trust whatever guidance you receive from within that point of balance.

For me, there is a key idea embodied within the following two quotes from the New Testament:

*If a house is divided against itself, that house cannot stand.*

### **Mark 3:25**

*No one can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot*

*serve both God and Money.*

## **Matthew 6:24**

Your beliefs about reality and about your life can enslave you to the kinds of experiences you are likely to have. When you focus on your pain, problem, or condition to the exclusion of all other possibilities, these issues become your master.

If you wish to take advantage of the wisdom of the Master, you must decide what you choose to serve and to serve up as your reality. When you open up your expectation set to allow for a miracle, you are no longer enslaved by the structures of your previous creations. You can choose anew.

Realize that at the fundamental level, light makes up the house of your atoms, cells, and electrons. This is the composition of your physical body. When the focus of your attention allows only for the observation of your problems and the substance of the physical body, to the exclusion of all other possibilities, you are in the duality of service to two masters. In order to change your outcome or to have a miracle, simply let go for a moment. Allow the primal reality that is light to shine through. In so doing, you can redefine the structure of reality. Service of the light is the service of the infinite. Master Paramahansa Yogananda wrote about the teachings of Christ in *Autobiography of a Yogi*. In this book he describes his experience of the light of Oneness:

*. . . my physical body lost its grossness . . . I felt a floating sensation . . . the weightless body shifted slightly . . . to the left and the right. I looked around the room; the furniture and the walls were as usual, but the mass of light had so multiplied that the ceiling was invisible. "This is the cosmic motion picture mechanism." A Voice spoke . . . "your form is nothing but light!"*

*I gazed at my arms and moved them back and forth, yet could not feel their weight. . . . The cosmic stem of light, blossoming as my body, seemed a divine reproduction of the light beams that stream out of the projection booth in a cinema house. . . . As the illusion of a solid body was completely dissipated . . . my realization deepened that the essence of all objects is light.<sup>1</sup>*

In Matrix Energetics, we teach a mythology that states that we are made up of photons. What we have done in physics is divide things up into the realm of the very small. In this realm of virtual particles and collapsing wave functions, reality behaves according to quantum rules, which are very strange indeed. Then we say that large objects, such as our physical bodies, are only subject to the laws of classical physics: Newtonian-based laws.

From a scientific perspective, we are ultimately composed of atoms. The atom breaks down into electrons, protons, and neutrons. Electrons do not actually orbit around the nucleus as we were taught in school. Instead, the electrons have what are called *probability orbits*. In essence, they only have a defined orbit around the nucleus when we observe them. They exist in an *electron cloud*. Then when we measure them, expecting them to be in a particular orbit, they collapse into that orbit we expect to see. I am still talking about you and what composes the apparent structure of your physical body and surrounding environment.

From the threshold of the electron, we move deeper into smaller terrains composed of virtual particles, such as muons and gluons, and so on and so forth, down to the photon. The photon can either manifest as a particle or a wave. (Or as Louis de Broglie would have it, as a particle *and* a wave.) We now are dealing with light and information—and that is what I believe we are made of. Not sugar and spice and everything nice, or snakes and snails and puppy-dog tails.

If, at a fundamental level, what we are composed of is a stream of photons held together by consciousness, then how are we not that at the macroscopic level of our bodies? So again, I remind you that when we measure something at the quantum level, we change it. It is called the *observer effect*. We cannot actually measure the velocity or the position of the quantum particle without changing it through the act of our observation. So the question to ask ourselves is, what lens of observation are we looking through?

## HUMAN EXPERIENCE

The language of the science behind Matrix Energetics' "two-point" process is useful. I believe that Matrix Energetics could not have gotten to its present level of sophistication without my growing love for physics and science. The two-point process provides a measuring tool, which supercharges our ability to notice where we can plug into the grid of the *All That Is*.

Now, how do you know what a measurement is? It is looking into someone's eye and noticing whether he or she is angry with you or excited or perhaps puzzled. You are performing a measurement based upon billions of calculations. All that complexity can be reduced to the simplicity of noticing what you notice and still remain completely complex. That is where you can pop into the grids of manifestation, without the need to understand any of it.

## COLLAPSING THE WAVE

To remind you, two or more quantum systems can share the same quantum wave.

When they do this, it can be said that they connect or become *entangled*. At the subatomic level, you are made of high-energy photons; your body consists of light and information held in patterns or waves of interference. When you connect the two points, you have consciously observed them as being linked. You have created that link with your imagination. What you imagine at the level of the photon has tremendous power to change these patterns of light and information. The act of focusing at this level, where everything is just made of light energy, causes what you observe to behave differently. You collapse the particle-based arrangement of your world into intricate patterns or wave fronts of light. Feel and sense this happening.

It is helpful to think that when you are doing the two-point procedure with someone else, you are in a very real way entangled with some aspect of yourself.

Your experience of the other person is not the same as their experience of themselves, or even their experience of you. It is a uniquely blended state, and when you engage in the production of such an outcome, there is a unique opportunity for transformation of consciousness to occur. Through this process, not only do the things that you choose to focus on change, but you change and transform as well. By

“doing nothing” and not trying to “fix” anything during this process, you are entering into transformation.

When you practice the art of Two-Point, it represents a new paradigm for things you can do or access with your sensory modality of touch. If you endeavor to do this on a daily basis, you begin to have glimpses of the hidden reality and its complexities behind the shroud of daily events. Things no longer happen to you.

Instead, you begin to take responsibility for your creative use of universal energy.

## **EXCERPT ON THE TWO-POINT PROCEDURE**

### ***A Radio Interview with Dr. Richard Bartlett:1***

***Interviewer: How do you work with Matrix Energetics in your office, Dr. Bartlett?***

***Richard:*** I do not talk about health care because when you are talking about health care you are also talking about disease care. It is a balanced polarity of opposites, and any time you are working with one end of a polarity or a pole, you are working with another end. So if you are trying to heal someone, you are trying to heal him or her from a disease. Every time you do that, you can only use the parameters and the judgments that would be exercised in response to a condition.

Once you get out of the conditioned response, out of the tendency to react, a stimulus/response way of thinking, then what you can say is “I do not know what is going to happen next. I surrender to the moment and then embrace what shows up as being useful—and then learn from that.”

## *How do you determine what you are going to do to help a person?*

One of the many things we teach people in a seminar is to make distinctions by *noticing what they notice*. What that means in the way we are trained medically is that when someone comes into my office and says, “I have problems with my knees,” and I look at their knees and fixate on their knee, I see them as having a knee with a problem. Then perhaps I add in a diagnosis that has already been superimposed upon that condition. I have now collapsed the probability of that pattern into a knee with a problem. That is all we are going to see, so at that point, we hope I am good with knee problems. That is the only option I really have left open.

At the other extreme, if someone comes in with a knee pain, I am certainly not going to respond by saying something like “I have a knee also.” If I respond that way, then I deserve a knee in the groin. No, I will be respectful, and I will touch and hold their knee. It is kind of like a split or dual mind. I can go to the point of what I refer to in my first book as a “problem-set.” This would represent the state of pain in the knee, replete with swelling and all the possible diagnosis and treatments, and whatever else has happened in the past. I can also *at the same time* hold an open frame of awareness for whatever shows up in the moment.

The way we are trained to focus on structure or matter, we look at the knee and our eyes focus on the knee. What if, instead, suddenly I am looking at the knee, and I target a space six inches out from the physical knee, and that is where my attention fixates? I am going to assume that the information six inches out from the knee is where I want to start to notice changes in that pattern. In other words, I will be drawn to an area and will focus on that, *but not to the exclusion of everything else*.

I will just allow myself to go into what is called *second attention*, let my awareness drift into what shows up, and then begin to work with that. It is like a conversation. Once you start to work with something like that, you interact with it and *notice what changes*. Completing that action, then you would notice where your attention is drawn next. If you do this and link them together, then what you do is create a specific syntax or language that allows you access to their problems, without entering into the problem state.

***So it is really a case of going into a state of expanded awareness?***

Absolutely. That is what we teach in the seminar. If we can get people into a state of feeling the change when they do something that we call the Two-Point, then when they feel it in themselves, and more importantly around themselves as expanded potential, they are now in a state where it really does not matter what they do; they will have an effect.

***So what is the two-point technique?***

Do you know how, when you take two poles of a magnet, like, say, refrigerator magnets, and you bring them together, at one point if the poles are matched they will push apart and if they are mismatched then they will pull together? You will get this dynamic tension in the air between the two magnets.

Touch one point on anything. It could be on a guitar or on a car or on a knee.

Notice where it may feel stuck, hard, or rigid. It does not have to be painful. Rather, upon touching it, that point feels different from the rest of the area. That is the first point that you are going to choose to notice.

Now you have this first point. All you are doing is noticing something. Now take your other hand and just play around on your leg or any other object of your choosing in a different area—it does not matter where—until you find something that feels like it makes that first area harder, more stuck, more rigid, or like it is being pulled together like a magnet. That is what you are looking for. That is where you have actually performed the measurement aspect of what we teach with the Two-Point.

***So is this a sensation that you experience in your hands?***

No, you will feel this sensation as a physical hardening of the tissue or area underneath your hand. For example, you have chosen one point on a leg and it just feels a little different from the rest of the leg. Why does it feel different? It feels different because you are creating a game where you are

choosing to look for something that feels different. It is not because it is different. It is because you choose.

Now as soon as you have done that, with the other hand, slide it along the leg or object which you have chosen until you almost feel a stick where you have a point that suddenly seems to draw those points together. That is an artificial, arbitrarily set-up measurement, but it allows you to play the virtual reality game. Now having connected those two points and realizing at the level of quantum physics that the act of measuring actually causes a change in your measurement, you let go as if you were dropping a pebble into the pond. (Do not let go of the object.) You imagine that you let go of the need for that to be physical, and you feel this expansive wave between those two points.

Many of you may experience a feeling of lightness, expansiveness, inability to think, joy, et cetera. Some people can experience other emotions, some people can see colors, pain disappears, all sorts of changes can happen. How is this possible?

Realize that these two points no longer represent just a physical object. They are merely two points that you have chosen to measure. That leads you to all other points and all sixty-plus trillion cells and all the photons thereof and the emotions and the chakras. It links you to the experience of you as being human.

***So what I perceive when I do that is a sensation of great warmth.***

Yes, that makes sense. Warmth is one way to look at it. I want to share with you that if you just see it or experience it as warmth, then that is fine. That is an observable effect, and that is what we are looking for. But we also want to allow for the unobserved effects as well. In other words, if you do this and you feel warmth in your leg, you might also find that your relationship with your dog or your car or with the traffic on the interstate has improved.

You might find that your memory changes or diseases vanish or any number of things. Why? Well, because at this point, *you are playing by a different set of rules.*

With those different rules, you are deciding to behave as a set of photons or as light and information. All you have to do to change a condition at that level is to change the information that is being given to that pattern.

***Would you then suggest some sort of visualization of what you would like the***

***pattern to look like?***

No, because when you visualize something, then what you are doing is limiting the outcome to only what you can visualize. Really, what that does is it keeps you physical. It keeps you from collapsing the wave function of those photons into a new pattern. You see, it only takes the blink of an eye to collapse a wave function, and it might come right back to feeling the same. But what people tend to notice is there are either subtle or very strongly defined differences, and at that point, you have entered into a larger reality. Then it is a matter of practice. Remember, you are not with those two points trying to fix a problem. Rather, you are using this process as a metaphor for your life and for your entire conscious experience.

***So you are viewing yourself as not just a pattern of photons but as a holographic***

***pattern of photons?***

That is correct. You are using the point you have chosen as a tool of measurement to measure any aspect of yourself. Now let us do this again. This time think about some nonphysical aspect of your being that attracts your attention. It can be your love life, your finances—whatever you are drawn to in the moment that might benefit from a solution. Now find a point on your leg that matches that feeling.

Remember, it is not a leg anymore. It now represents your feeling about x, whatever that is.

***Does it matter which hand I start with?***

It does not matter which hand you use. It is not a polarity phenomenon. In fact, you do not need to use your hands. I am teaching your conscious mind. So find a spot that represents your situation. Can you share what situation you have chosen?

***It is a project.***

Here is the point about projects. Make it more global than a project. Do not make it about a single outcome of the project. Make it about the feeling of the project. Now find a spot on your leg that matches that feeling. It is easier to do than to say because, really, you are making it up. You make up a spot and decide that is going to be it. That will be it. Now what you are going to do is find another spot. It does not have to be on your leg. It can be on your desk or on your microphone or your telephone. Any second point will do. The important point is to feel connected with those points.

Now, simply imagine that suddenly you let go of all your concerns, of all your affairs. You spiral up into the air as streams of light without a care in the world.

Then it becomes quite different. Now, if you go back and remeasure that point with a thought about the thing you were thinking before, it is going to be different. Go back to where you were before and think about what you were feeling before. Feel how it feels. In most cases, you are not going to be able to define it in the same old way or it is going to feel very open or expanded or you may not be able to describe what you are feeling.

***In my case it feels cooler, like a cool, refreshing drink on a hot day.***

That happens to me a lot. I will feel like a cool wind went through my brain. It has a very physical feeling.

***Also, I feel lighter and brighter.***

Now notice how you feel. Take your attention off the point and notice how you feel.

What do you notice?

***Definitely a feeling of great positiveness, and optimism. It is a fabulous feeling.***

Now expand that out from your physical body and notice how the space around you feels.

Now find a spot on your chair that attracts your attention. Do not make it about anything. It feels hard or magnetic or simply attracts your attention. Now find another spot, maybe on a part of your body, like on your shoulder or a part of your chest. Make that spot match the feeling of the chair. In other words, find those two spots and find the feeling of them as being related. It is really simple.

Now, do not let go of the spots. Let go of your consciousness and let it expand out into the universe. This is called the collapse of the wave function, and it does actually do that. If you touch your chair now, it is going to feel weird. It is going to feel expanded. It is very hard to describe, but people tell me this all the time at seminars.

***Actually, my hands feel weird. I was actually not touching any point. I was about***

***an inch away on both spots in midair.***

That is great. You do not have to be touching anything. You can measure spots that do not exist because, in the quantum realm, none of that exists. You are making up your experience of the external universe and then building it up in your brain. Your eyes function as feature detectors, and you build up the holographic reference in your brain for what is out there. Some physicists who are particularly “out there” say there is nothing “out there” to measure.

***What is interesting is my hands are still feeling very much as though I were***

***manipulating subtle energies.***

Realize that it is not about running energy, and it is not even all that subtle. Expand that and notice how your left big toe feels in relation to that experience. Until you are told to focus on it, you may not notice. But you will notice this effect taking place in your entire world.

***How fascinating. Boy, that is an easy technique to learn!***

It is so easy, it is literally child's play. . . playing like a child. The more you play like a child, the more expansive your awareness, the deeper your outcomes.

Children pick this up in a heartbeat. There was a famous university medical oncologist who was recently in my seminar. He came to the seminar very skeptical. I brought him up to the stage and did a Two-Point. He wound up unconscious, not having a clue as to what happened, and the whole room of one hundred and forty people felt a sense of sacred space.

You see, when you make this up and you make it up in a group space, it becomes like a sacred experience in nonordinary reality. It becomes very sacred and shamanic in tone, but also very physical, very reproducible, and very observable as a physical outcome. In other words, you can see scoliosis or a headache vanish. You can observe a jaw that does not move and suddenly the jaw moves instantly. Sometimes tumors or other physical maladies may vanish either instantly or over time. This is the thing. *You can only observe the things you can see. But changes you cannot see are also occurring, and they are probably the most significant changes.*



***Time to go. So can you please give a one-sentence summation of Matrix Energetics?***

Transformation occurs when you let go of the need for anything to happen.

**TWO-POINT REVIEW**

1. Locate a point on your body or a partner's that feels stuck, hard, or rigid when you touch it.

2. Find a second point that, when held in relation to the first point you are still touching, makes the relationship between points one and two feel even more taut, as if there is a magnetic attraction between the two areas.

3. Forming a somewhat arbitrary link between these two points allows for a measurement to be made. Remember that according to quantum theory, you cannot observe something without becoming entangled or interacting with it. The very act of observing the connection between these points with your feeling/

imagination makes it so. This entangles the data and, in effect, collapses the wave of matter/consciousness that you have chosen to observe and to interact with.

4. Notice what is different now. The area between your two points probably feels softer and less rigid. You may notice changes in respiration; you or your practice partner may feel hot or flushed. It is not uncommon for the body to begin to sway or move to the beat of some unconscious primal rhythmic force. Stand behind your partner, because if he or she really entered the state I am describing, your partner may even momentarily lose consciousness. It is good to be prepared for anything, including spontaneous laughter, crying, or some other form of emotional/physical release.

### **KEY POINTS TO REMEMBER**

1. It takes at least two points to measure anything.

2. In order to learn something new, you begin by noticing what is different.

3. Noticing what is different helps you suspend critical judgment and allows space for a new pathway of least action to be created. (In other words, you are creating a new activity that, with practice, becomes a new skill.)

Here is an example of how a first-time Matrix Energetics seminar participant corrected a painful condition through the simple application of focused intent on the problem using Two-Point:

*I attended a conference at JFK in New York in late October. I was unsure of what, if anything, I could do following this experience, but I hoped to be able to help my wife*



*with her shoulder, which had been troubling her for over six months (severe stiffness and pain). She was 80 percent cured with the first treatment, and the effect was instantaneous! Needless to say, she is thrilled with the result. That alone made the trip well worthwhile!*

— JS

Basic Two-Point: Measuring like points on the body (in this case, shoulders).

Checking relative motion in the shoulder points. Noticing what I notice.



Basic Two-Point on the body.

Collapsing the wave. Obvious physical result.



Experiencing instantaneous transformation.

Experiencing instantaneous transformation (continued).





Her world has been turned upside down.

“Wow, that was a really big wave. Let’s go again!”



Example of Two-Point off the body.

Moving into the Matrix state.



Experiencing a deeply altered state.

Basic Two-Point for a shoulder issue.



Feeling better.

Deeply relaxing into heart-centered awareness.



Two-Point working with expanding the field of the heart.



Two-point example on acupuncture mannequin for distance treatment.



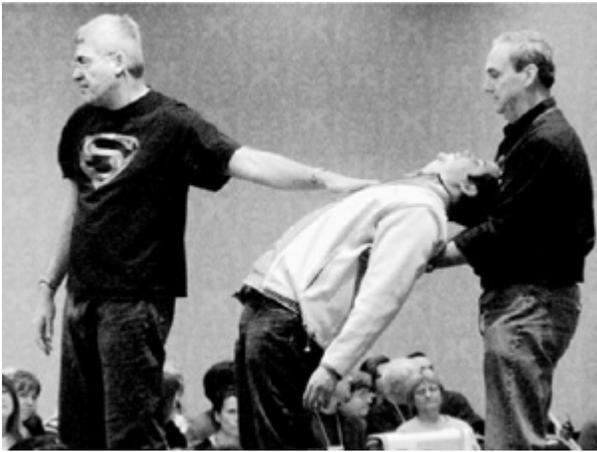
Two-Point on surrogate demonstrating distance treatment.

Two-Point for the energy field of the pelvis.



Feeling “stuff” change.

“Gone in Sixty Seconds.”



Just another day at the office (aka a seminar).



Working with the practitioner-certification distance protocol.

12

## **TRUST WHATEVER SHOWS UP IN THE MOMENT**

When we measure, most of us judge what we are measuring. We try to analyze it.

We try to make sense of it. We try to make it mean something that fits our perception of the way the real world functions. There is something called innocent perception. Innocent perception or practicing the patterns of perception means that you notice whatever shows up. Our path of expectation assumes that there is a cause and effect to things: that if we do this, then this will happen, and if we do not, then something else will happen. There is no logic to it. But it is a logic we have embraced.

Your experience of reality, however you define it, is what you are able to observe and define. This does not mean that you cannot have an experience outside the confines of your reality. What it does mean is that in order to have an experience, you may have to step into a different way of observing, which is fine. One of the things you are going to learn in this book is how to *notice what you notice*. I am not referring to your ability to notice what you think you are supposed to observe or think. I will not tell you what the

object of the game is but ask you to see with a fresh perspective how to notice what you notice.

If I look at you at a point right between your eyes, but my visual tracking drifts out several feet from your physical form, I am going to pay attention. Employing a soft gaze, I might ask myself the question, “What am I unconsciously noticing out there?” And then I am going to trust that information to be pertinent and useful to the moment. I am going to think that is worth trusting. So I go here, and way out there, and feel that. There. That gives us access to other possibilities.

If you find that your eyes go to the floor when looking at someone’s chest, or they are drawn to your ear or someone’s hairdo or a light fixture, then you trust that.

When you do that it gives you access to other realities. Once you start to play that way, what has happened is you have encoded for a different experience. You are starting to see more of the information that is not normally accessible to your sensory apparatus until you assign the priority to pay attention.

All you need to do for massive change to be available to you is to notice something that gets your attention. It is about trusting and letting yourself go to the place where your attention is drawn. This is a measurement. Allow yourself to *notice something in the moment, and that will be your first point*. The measurement of the feeling or expression or anything that could give you a new reference can constitute *the second point*.

I do not know what that is going to be, and you do not need to know. This is a secret contract and is “eyes only” and on a “need-to-know basis.” Just moving into a space where any aspect of your life can be different opens up a door of possibility for you to be there. You want to be in a space where things can show up differently instead of achieving the observed result of your normal expectations. Don’t be overly concerned by what seemingly eludes your conscious attention.

It’s okay to allow yourself to be perplexed or even to question whether anything I am saying is real or true. That is a healthy attitude to maintain,

one of relaxed skepticism. Allow yourself to embrace the sense of not knowing, for that is where the power is. When you release the need to know or to do, you collapse the wave function of the problem-set into the unseen answer. Then you can precipitate within yourself the object or state of your desire. If your outcomes are always predicated on your conscious expectations, then where is the space you have set aside for miracles to occupy?

Dr. Hector Garcia, DC, is a good friend as well as a Certified Master Practitioner of Matrix Energetics and a certified instructor of the Yuen Method. He uses his unique abilities as a medical intuitive to facilitate the different energy systems of the body. He talks about “noticing what you notice”:

*I notice things from within my mind and then project that awareness out into my external world environment. I am starting to do what Richard talks about by allowing myself to “notice what I notice” from “out there.” As I have begun to utilize this principle, I have started to interact with whatever gets my attention or shows up.*

*For some reason, a lot of patients with tumors or growths come to see me. With a tumor patient, I will begin by calibrating the energy. By calibration, I mean I will touch the client on their body where the tumor is located, and this will become my first contact in my Two-Point. It is a point of measurement or observation. Next, I will look for a second point that gives me that stuck or rigid pulling type of sensation that Richard talks about in association with the phenomenon of the two-point process.*

*This second point does not have to be physical but can represent an energetic construct or concept. For instance, I want to know if I can calibrate the energy of the tumor in the client’s body. Something like a tumor, though seen on an MRI or x-ray or other diagnostic tests, can, in my experience, have its actual causative energy pattern in one of three primary sources.*

***Locate where the Energy Is Coming From***

*A tumor, or any condition for that matter, for my purposes, can be of the body, meaning that the tumor has a physical source and its energy is centered in the physical body. When I calibrate this, I know that if a diagnostic test is run in that case, there will often be clinically verifiable findings.*

*The second source of a pattern such as a tumor may be something that tests as coming **from the body**. In this situation, the tumor has come from within the internal bodily processes out into physical manifestation. This means to me that there is an internally caused source of the problem. This could be from **genetics** or a pattern in the **ancestral line** of the mother or the father's side of the family. It could result from a habitual pattern of belief. Or it could be a combination of genetic, emotional, and physical factors.*

*The third type of general pattern that I work with is a condition that comes **to the***

***body** and is the causative seed of the condition. This type of pattern can be the result of a toxin or poison, something taken in from the external environment. It could be the result of an external trauma, which impacted the body, sometimes in the distant past, and set in motion the processes, which could ultimately lead to the formation of a tumor or other condition.*

*In a more esoteric vein, a tumor or other disease pattern could result from taking in toxic belief patterns from another person or society in general—a belief, for instance, that a certain slice of the population is more statistically vulnerable to certain types of conditions or disorders due to factors such as race, sex, genetics, eating habits, mind-sets, cultural beliefs, or a host of other factors. These beliefs, or so-called scientific facts, can be in some cases the soil in which a tumor or other condition can be watered and nurtured.*

## **IN THE BLINK OF AN EYE, YOU CAN BE MADE WHOLE**

The quantum physics perspective can bring you to the point of oneness with the realm of magical possibilities. When you enter into the unified field of the heart, even for a brief blink of an eye, you can be made whole. This is why things such as diseases, cancers, phobias, and other conditions and

limiting expectations can cease to exist when we do a Two-Point. When you cease assigning these things importance, they can cease to exist.

13

## **TIME FOR A CHANGE**

In 1837 mathematician, astronomer, and physicist Sir William Hamilton suggested in his collective works that a science of pure time is possible, as it is well known that the fundamental units of time utilized in science are arbitrary. That means what? We made them up. It is even possible to construct all science on a single unit: time.

## **TIME TRAVEL AS AN EXPRESSION OF QUANTUM CONSCIOUSNESS**

How do you measure time? You measure the scattering of *electromagnetic energy* over a distance, and distance times force equals your measurement of time. This shows the truth in Hamilton's statement. It is even odder because quantum mechanical time is not observable. It does not exist in this reality. Einstein said time is something clocks measure. He collapsed time into space-time. He said the two had to be collapsed together.

In physics, the mathematical term for time can be "plugged into" either the forward or the reverse direction. The equations work equally well either way.

Whenever equations exhibit that kind of mirror symmetry, scientists tend to ignore it. They often say, "Well, that is just an artifact of the way it is examined." But what if it is not? There is a clue here that perhaps you can, in some unsuspected manner, move backward and forward in time. If the equations work in either direction, perhaps then you can theoretically find a way to take advantage of this to your benefit.

Photons can go backward and forward in time. A wave of photons traveling forward in time represents the "advanced wave," and the one traveling backward in time is the "retarded wave." Where these phase-conjugated waves of photons intersect creates the present moment. Why do you

suppose we have a part of the brain called the temporal lobe? Fred Alan Wolf, an author and independent scholar and researcher in physics and consciousness, theorizes that it might have something to do with time travel. He has said that there is a time travel machine—and that it is our brain.

The present moment is now. What we call the linear experience of time is electromagnetic energy dissipating along a measured volume of space, according to Tom Bearden, a retired lieutenant colonel who helped design the Motionless Electromagnetic Generator (MEG) and continues to study scalar electromagnetics and unified theory.

We measure the distance traveled by the dissipating energy, and we call that the passage of time, or *entropy*. Time is how we measure work. It is what happens over time as energy dissipates. That is actually what work is.

Now what would happen if you flipped the polarity, or phase of time, so that energy is directed into the nucleus of the atom? If you do that, you get out the inverse pattern, which is negative energy or *negentropy*; it is *time reversed*.

Negentropic energy doesn't dissipate; it coheres. If you reverse disease energy, you can engineer the cells back into their coherent and healthy condition.

When you generate a complex wave equation engineered by your intent and powered by your electromagnetic energy/feeling state, you are creating a closed loop that will return to you the answer to your request. This feeling state, or personalized electrical energy pattern, can serve as the impetus with which an *artificially generated quantum potential* may be created and sustained.

In the movie *Back to the Future*, the professor invented something called “the Flux Capacitor.” Well, the Flux Capacitor may be based on an actual invention, the virtual flux of the vacuum, which according to Bearden is engineerable. When you curve space, it affects time. It changes it relatively. But there are negative space and negative time as well implied in this, and that energy may constitute the information in the vacuum. If you generate a

unit of negative time, it actually coheres (goes backward), and this concentrates the energy rather than dissipates it.

The forces of entropy (measured in units of positive time, “actual”

electromagnetic “EM” energy) and negentropy (measured as negative or backward flowing time, “virtual” or potential energy) are a paired manifestation. These paired forces represent the yin/yang of the universe. You can access that negative-space, negative-time energy and use it to curve local space-time. What is not possible within the constraints of classical physical laws can be circumvented.

When you apply the concepts of negentropy, or time-reversed waves, you begin to construct a scientific model for the reversal of disease conditions. If you also throw into this creative pot the potential to artificially construct templates or engines of consciousness with which to perform a specific task or function, the Physics of Miracles becomes understandable and reproducible. I am always being pushed to take things to the next level, whatever the next level looks like.

*Collapsing the wave function of the problem-set allows for miracles to show up.*

## **NEGATIVE TIME, NEGATIVE SPACE, AND VICTOR**

My son Victor came down with chicken pox when he was about three years old. At the time, I had just listened to a talk by now-retired Lt. Col. Bearden. I did not understand a word of what he had said, but somehow it caught a snag in my awareness.

Something clicked within me and a certainty took hold. Thinking of my son’s health, I then thought, “*Negative time, negative space.*” That was all I did. My only other thought was, “Go back to where you came from”—addressing the consciousness pattern of the chicken pox virus. Within the hour, Victor had no sign of his chicken pox. His fever and runny nose were gone. The spots were completely gone: it happened instantly! Scientifically, my explanation for what happened next is that I accessed the *scalar wave*

potential of the *carrier wave* (more about scalar waves later), and it instantly inverted.

## **TIME TRAVEL**

By utilizing the consciousness tools of Matrix Energetics, such as time travel, the seeds of many disease patterns can be reversed. You can “revisit” your childhood formative experiences without reliving or replaying the records of previous emotional charges and inherent traumas. You can learn how to change the wave patterns of your consciousness so that when you return to the present moment, whatever happened back in your childhood does not matter anymore. The possibilities are truly endless.

## **STEPS FOR EMPLOYING MATRIX ENERGETICS TIME-TRAVEL TECHNIQUE**

This is an exercise that is designed to take you through some steps to utilize the time-travel tool with another person.

1. Perform a measurement as previously taught in the two-point technique.
2. Ask the age of your partner or client. This will become your starting point, or as it’s called in the movie *The Philadelphia Experiment*, your *zero-point reference time reference*.
3. Begin counting backward in five-year increments while holding your Two-Point.
4. Set your intent so that the quantum waves of change will activate when you  
“arrive” at the event, age, or time frame that you wish to interact with. You do not have to actually know the correct age of the event, because as you approach the approximate time reference, you will begin to feel the two points that you are holding start to soften and change beneath your hands.
5. Be prepared for the possibility that you or your practice subjects will experience physical or emotional releases of energy when this occurs.

Gently support and comfort them, but try not to interfere with or edit their processing of the information and experiences.

6. When things have settled down and reached an apparent conclusion, reassess with your two-point procedure. Repeat the process if necessary, because there may be multiple time frames that need to be accessed to resolve the issue or pattern more completely.

## **TURNING BACK THE CLOCK**

A seminar participant shared this story, which profoundly illustrates the point that anything is possible.

*Some years ago I had an experience that to this day still confuses and somewhat scares me. It was late at night, and I had finished bottling spiritual essences, which was my job at the time. I went into the bathroom and looked at my face in the mirror, and I was twenty-eight years old. Out of my mouth came the words, “I don’t believe it!” I stayed up the rest of the night and watched as the image in the mirror transitioned gradually back into the face of a woman in her late fifties—my age at the time. That just scared the heck out of me. I had no reference or context in my philosophy to explain what had happened to me.*

— **JM**

Let me share with you another example that clearly demonstrates the applicability of time travel as a consciousness technology. A woman came to one of our seminars, and when she returned home, she began a healing practice. She had a client see her in her clinic (her home), asking to be cured of a particular phobia. It was an odd request—a bird phobia. The woman, a newbie Matrix Energetics practitioner, didn’t know what to do.

She did not know any phobia cures. So what did she do? She simply touched two points on the woman and conceptually “went backward in time” to before the lady had the phobia. The lady gently slumped to the floor, semi-unconscious, writhed around for a few minutes, and then came to. That was it. The next morning at 6:30, the fledgling practitioner (who had attended only one seminar) received a phone call from that client. The

client was excited out of her mind. She said, “You will never guess what I am doing. I am calling you from my cell phone while I am hand-feeding the birds in my backyard.”

14

## **MANY-WORLDS THEORY AND YOU**

Einstein knew that there were not two separate sets of physical laws, although you can work with them and describe them that way. Einstein understood that the act of looking at something at the quantum level changes it, which is why he stated that if he *accepted* quantum theory, a mouse could look at him and change him. But Einstein and other scientists, being somewhat practical, said they did not see that happening. So why isn't that happening?

If we know that we are made of photons, we should be able to look at something and see it change, but just looking at Einstein from the mouse's perspective generated no apparent change in Einstein. To a physicist, if something is to be considered a law, then it must hold true all the time. So if it *should* change and it *did not* change, then there must be some other explanation. There must be a hidden variable—something we do not know or that the current theory does not allow into the equation.

Physicists Hugh Everett and John Wheeler came up with an explanation they named the *many-worlds theory*. This theory states that when you look at something, it splits into universes of infinite possibilities. The reason you did not see it (a mouse or whatever) change is because of the way you looked at it; your habitual way of perceiving caused your observed reality to remain consistent with your sensory-driven set of expectations. All the other choices not observed decohered from your reality and manifested, or cohered into existence, in some other parallel universe you are unable to observe.

## **HOW CHOOSING WHAT YOU NOTICE PLAYS A ROLE IN WHAT YOU**

### **EXPERIENCE**

In the realm unaccessible to your senses, whole new universes spring into being, branching off from the one you choose to adhere to, through the act of your perception. Things remain the same because you do not have the differential apparatus to see the other realities. In this realm, light is equated with the observer.

Whatever is not observable in the electromagnetic spectrum, therefore, can be said to exist in a parallel universe.

The following story from one of my students is an excellent example of how parallel universes can be useful:

*A couple of months ago, my friend Angela was told she had a major blockage in her heart. The doctors said she would need surgery, a stent, and a year or more of medication. I happened to read a blog she had written detailing everything that they told her was “wrong with her” and how afraid she was about the whole thing. Being in a state where I use Matrix Energetics every day, I decided to “check in” to see if there was anything I could “do.” I instantly was able to see/feel the blockage in her heart. I was able to track the reality where she did indeed need the surgery and stent and medication. Knowing that was only one possible outcome, I shifted my awareness, and now I was witnessing the reality where the doctors went in and found nothing. I left it there, completely letting it go, and I didn’t even tell her.*

*A couple of days passed and, lo and behold, Angela came back online with an update. “What the hell?” she wrote. The doctors had gone in and there was nothing there. No blockage, they didn’t need to use the stent, and she wouldn’t need to take the medication after all. Nobody could figure out what had happened; no one could explain it. Now, whether or not that healing might have happened anyway, we’ll never know. All I know for sure is that there were a whole lot of people with pictures and lab test results who were convinced that there was the only one possible outcome.*

*Because of what I had learned in Matrix Energetics and my other studies about the nature of reality, I was convinced that for every situation there are many possible outcomes. This is only one of the amazing experiences I have*

*had since encountering Matrix Energetics. I use it daily, as it truly is more of a consciousness than a technique.*

— **MB**

## **PARALLEL UNIVERSES AND TUMORS**

My good friend Dr. Hector Garcia uses parallel universes to work with disease conditions such as tumors. He does his energy calibration where he asks, “Tumor of the body, for the body, or away from the body?” He calibrates or feels where the energy pattern of the tumor is located. He does not care if it shows up on a physical body. It may have its origin in other energetic realms, and what the body displays as a tumor in one way could be considered a reflection from the area of primary causation.

It is like the sun’s reflection on placid water. If you have never seen the sun but you see its reflection, you think that it is real, rather than a reflection. In Matrix reality, whether what you notice is true or not does not matter. What matters is that somehow you get out of the way and you access something that makes a difference, a parallel universe or Bugs Bunny—it does not matter.

Dr. Garcia might say something like “You do not have cancer. It is in the fourth parallel universe. This parallel has cancer.” So he sends the cancer to the fourth parallel. Now what happens if you send the cancer to the fourth parallel? Are you going to create cancer in a person there? No. If that person in the fourth parallel has cancer, and you send the cancer waveform signature to it, you are creating the anti-cancer wave. You cancel it out and it disappears from both sets of realities. If you cancel it out here, in this fourth dimensional space, the reflection is gone in the fourth parallel as well.

People used to worry that if you send it “out there,” then you would give cancer to someone in another universe or dimension. No, you are sending out that force of negentropy that I described earlier. You are time-reversing the waveform of the electromagnetic signature of the cancer pattern.

As an example to help you understand this concept, pretend with me that you have lived in a dark cave all your life, as in Plato's cave allegory. You have never seen the light of day directly, but you have seen the shadows cast on the walls of your cave from the sunlight. When you venture for the first time outside the shelter of your cave, the sun blinds you. You do not know what the heck that big shiny thing in the sky is; all you have seen your whole life is shadows, reflections of the primal cause or reality.

Now I want you to visualize a pond. The pond will represent, for the purpose of clarification, your physical environment. Your whole life you have perceived the world through the reflections on the surface of your own particular pond. What you are really doing is looking at the light of the sun as an indirect reflection on the surface of the pond. The light you perceive, in this case, a parallel universe, would be a reflection from a reality that does not exist in this realm; it represents a kind of virtual image or reality subset. However, given our perceptual bias and our ability to mold photons with thought, we make it exist. You realize that this reflection of light from the electromagnetic spectrum in a parallel universe is also a real thing; it is a *phase-conjugate*, a replica or mirror reality.

A mirror is phase-conjugated, meaning that if you look in a mirror, you see a reversed image. What you can do with a disease pattern is send it back to where the actual thing is (four parallel universes away). Now what happens to the disease, metaphorically, is that the reflection of the sun goes behind the clouds or is obscured, or perhaps in a parallel universe, the energy signature of the tumor pattern is actually obliterated in that moment. It disappears from the pond. Why does it disappear? Because you have phase-conjugated the information back to where it really originated, which, of course, cancels it out there. I think that may be one way Jesus healed withered limbs and other maladies. My whole life has been spent trying to get to this point of understanding the physics behind miracles.

## **PARALLEL UNIVERSES AND INTERDIMENSIONAL HEALING**

When I two-point the energy, if I cannot find my second point on a client's body, then I go to where the information takes me. I often leave my hand on the area of concern, and I think "parallel universes," for example, and work with the concept as my primary point of reference. Wherever I find it, I will

“follow” by feeling or otherwise sensing the information. I will work with it wherever it shows up for me as the connecting link in my two-point process. Once I let go of the information, I allow whatever comes to me to happen as I drop down into an altered state of acceptance. I then simply get out of the way and allow the Matrix to reconfigure the pattern.

If my Two-Point calibrates (or “picks up”) information for another dimension, this indicates to me that the information needed to change resides outside the normal dimensions of accepted space-time (such as length, width, height, and time) but still within what can be considered to be in this universe. I will follow the information wherever it takes me, noticing whatever I notice, and then let go of the need to “do anything” while universal intelligence and power restructures and transforms the pathological or distorted energy pattern.

## **PARALLEL UNIVERSES AND OTHER REALITY GAMES: DR. GARCIA**

*If a person (or you) wants to work on a condition concerning eyesight, for example, I go to the body and feel for a connection in my Two-Point (which can just be in my mind once I get comfortable working in that manner). In this example, let’s pretend that I do not feel anything there; nothing in the physical body energy grabs my attention concerning the expression of this problem. I **trust that** and look in a different way or I scan elsewhere. For example, in this case I don’t “pick up” the information in this reality, but in a (perhaps a hypothetical or perhaps actual)*

*Parallel Universe.*

### ***Working with Dimensions and Parallel Universes***

*In other words, when I say or perhaps just think the words “parallel universe,” I feel a change in myself or in the other person or perhaps the field (space) between us. I sense an opening or a connection with the pattern of interest. That sense may feel different for you; the important thing is not how somebody else’s process might function in a similar context. **Notice what you notice: whatever feels right to you.***

*Follow the flow of information in a relaxed manner, wherever it takes you.*

*Remember, one of the greatest keys to success with this process that I can give you*

*is to stay out of your own way! 1*

## **THE PARALLELS OF DR. DUNN**

Dr. Mark Dunn (my student who eventually became my medical practice partner) was on a plane several years ago, and another plane came within an uncomfortably close proximity. When this occurred, something weird happened to Mark's reality.

Nothing actually happened in this space-time, and the planes did not collide, but somehow Mark appeared to phase into what he came to think of as a parallel universe.

He arrived back in Seattle, and the signs in the airport looked vaguely different.

Streets that he had been driving for many years did not take him to the old familiar places. The problem intensified when he went out to the pier near where he lived at the time and heard a strange, loud munching noise coming from somewhere under the pier. He asked several local fishermen if they heard that munching sound, but they looked at him as if he were crazy, carefully moving away from him.

The problem was accentuated when he returned to his office. The people who should have been on his schedule weren't. Individuals kept showing up for their regular appointment, but Mark had never met them before. To top off this case of weirdness, somehow my voice wound up in the background of his answering machine message. There was one little problem: I was not there when Mark recorded that message, so that was not possible! It took a few days but eventually Mark flipped back into this universe and everything stabilized relatively again. Yes, anything is possible—but the question we might ask ourselves is, **is it useful?**

## **SEE IF THERE IS A PARALLEL TO THESE EXPERIENCES**

### **SOMEWHERE IN YOUR LIFE**

When we teach about parallel universes in the seminars, for some people it is a metaphor. For a few, it is a “met-a-floor” event, and for the occasional lucky one, it becomes a way of life. Mark just recently told me that he feels he has gathered enough awareness that he might actually be able to step into a parallel universe, or place, and fully inhabit it. I told him if he found himself going through a set of doors presented to him and above one was a sign that read “Gates of Hell” and above the other “Gates of Bill,” choose the latter. “Good point,” he replied.

You do not want to just go willy-nilly wherever your fantasies or visions take you. Trust your inner guidance and consider installing a virtual reality GPS. I wonder how many of us, who have lost our way in Life, could benefit from installing something like that within our consciousness.

### **RESONANCE WITH CONCOMITANT SELF**

I read a fascinating science-fiction novel titled *Resonance* by Chris Dolley. In this book, the central character’s timeline is becoming unraveled. Without warning the man would find himself within a different parallel reality where some of the details, such as where he lived or where he worked, had changed. As the story goes on, we find out that there are hundreds, perhaps thousands of versions of the central character. These parallels are beginning to converge due to a resonance that is set up as a result of similar choices and actions across the grid of multiple worlds. It is a useful concept and probably not an entirely fictional construct.

An oscillating, tapestry-like pattern or grid can become woven into the structure of your personal space/time. The presence of this increasingly powerful grid can form a strange attractor, which can allow for the increase of synchronicities or so-called lucky happenstances in your life. This is an interesting and useful idea, because if you are not living the ideal life that you would prefer, inevitably some parallel “you” is!

## RESONANCE WITH OUR SELVES

You can *begin to resonate unconsciously with the right choices and lucky synchronicities that your more successful counterparts enjoy*. You can begin to bridge the timelines and merge them in the here and now. You can, in effect, create new opportunities, skills, and events in your life. Over time, this practice of parallel mindfulness will steer you to the convergence point where you begin to live the life of your grandest dreams. All you need is a little help from your parallel-self friends.

If this sounds crazy, be advised that the most successful military remote viewer, Joe McMoneagle, believes that his success at remote viewing is due in part to information that another self sends him from twenty-five years in the future!

15

## THE PHYSICS OF MIRACLES

In the 1800s, James Clerk Maxwell, a Scottish mathematician and theoretical physicist, developed the rules for how electricity and magnetism behaved. He combined electricity, magnetism, and gravity in quaternion algebra. There were twenty equations to this theorem, which collectively described very succinctly the unification of electromagnetism and gravity. It was the original unified field theory.

When Maxwell died, Oliver Heaviside, who had worked with him, apparently decided that quaternion algebra was a headache. Heaviside got a little bit heavy with his editing finger and he took the quaternions out of the equations and substituted vectors. When Heaviside took out the scalar terms (real numbers and real parts) in Maxwell's original quaternion equations, we lost the ability to unite electromagnetism and gravity. We lost the *scalar potential*.

Einstein studied the truncated equations and concluded that you couldn't bend local space-time. The principles of relativity say that you cannot have a local curvature of space-time. If you can't curve local space-time then you

can't transcend gravity because it takes a large body, such as the sun, to curve space-time. Einstein was working from faulty assumptions when he developed his theory of relativity.

The quaternion math yielded the normal electromagnetic field and a *scalar field*, which when combined yields the potential for a *unified field theory*. That is right. At the time of the Civil War, Maxwell was able to unite the forces of electromagnetism and gravity through his quaternion approach. Unfortunately, when he died the original equations were lost and Einstein learned the truncated versions.

It was Heaviside's *vectors* that electricians studied in school, not Maxwell's quaternions. It's really hard to understand how Heaviside seemingly just said to himself, "Let's just get rid of that." We lost the understanding of Maxwell's *unified field theory* right then and there. The simpler vector-based approach of what was to become the current version of Maxwell's theory of *electromagnetism* lost something important in translation.

A scalar potential defines two vectors that, when added together, add up to zero.

The two vectors' angles are perpendicular to each other and they sum up to a

"directional vector of zero." The two perpendicular waves cancel out the directional component. When you have such a situation, your combined vector has no defined direction that can be measured; only a force of magnitude remains. Since no internal geometries are even posited as the result of different multivector systems, the net sum of a scalar vector would be zero. The geometries that the vectors can be configured with will change the *quantum/information potential* of the scalar wave.

This potential can be projected into the vacuum, creating a virtual stress into the nuclei of the atoms. Once this stress pattern builds sufficient momentum, it can be linked to a torsion field, which can travel far in excess of the speed of light. In the vacuum there continually exists at any and every point, and in any and every region, the ghostly image of anything and

everything—whether in the past, present, or future and whether potential, probabilistic, or actual.

The universal vacuum may be taken to be a sort of giant hologram. The virtual replicas of all matter, including living organisms, exist in the vacuum as virtual or ghost forms. These are constantly shifting, changing, and transforming in and out of existence. You could have a particle, wave, *antiparticle*, or *antiwave*. Even an Angel could pop out of the void, becoming temporarily solid.

This hyperdimensional being could readily move from holographic virtual dimensions into actual physical reality. This Angel pattern might pop into our four-dimensional space, perhaps just long enough to save a falling baby or even prevent you from having an accident. With the emergency safely over, that same Angel might pop back into the hyperdimensional realms, the spaces between the spaces, until needed or called into being again.

What this means is this: *“Real stuff” shows up when enough “virtual stuff” becomes adequately activated by our thought and feeling projections.* Then, over time, what we have created with our willful intent diffuses and dissipates from this reality. This occurs in part because we have not developed the ability to hold it in manifestation by loving it enough to sustain its continued existence.

If you start with the principles of scalar electromagnetics and combine that with the developing physics of *torsion* and *spin*, you can embrace elements of both as a starting point. ***Now we are starting to unlock the secrets of a physics that is***

***powered by the force of consciousness.*** This new approach may provide profound keys to some of the alchemical secrets that have been sought since the beginning of time. By merging scientific theory with spiritual technologies, ***we can begin to***

***create a workable, unified field theory for consciousness technology.***

**THE POWER OF MIND OVER MATTER**

Scalar electromagnetics is partly a consciousness technology, which is what makes it so useful for Matrix Energetics. You can also utilize phase-conjugate technology to reverse the course of a disease. I believe that the Matrix Energetics time-travel technique may work according to this principle. You can utilize the two-point and time-travel methodologies in order to perform a type of mental targeting. This mental projection of scalar waves linked with specific advanced technologies is called *psychotronics* in Russia and *radionics* in the West.

Albert Abrams, MD, is the father of *radionics*. He noticed that when he tapped on someone's abdomen, he could elicit different sounds or the sound of a tympani, depending on what condition or disease the patient had. One day in his medical practice, he accidentally noticed that whenever he moved a pathological tissue culture near the abdomen, it changed the sound given off when he percussed the patient's abdominal quadrants. Abrams paid attention to what he noticed and asked new questions of himself. From there he made up radionics.

What he then noticed was that these pathological cells gave off information. For the next step in Abrams's experiments, he attached the dish containing the pathological tissue culture to a long, thin copper wire. Abrams would then touch the distal end of the wire to the patient's abdomen. When the doctor percussed the abdomen, depending on what culture was in circuit, the timbre of the sound varied significantly. Abrams was actually able to correctly diagnose the patient's disease by determining which pathological culture elicited the greatest change in the abdominal sound when percussed!

As time went by, Abrams realized that in order for the diseased tissue culture to be able to make changes in the abdominal sounds, he must have been dealing with some kind of subtle energy, since the patient had no physical contact with the pathogen. Abrams then hit on the brilliant idea that the disease or condition could be represented by a specific set of electromagnetic frequencies. A true medical pioneer, Abrams began to transmit the electromagnetic signature of the pathogen down the copper wire to the patient. At this point a strange and wonderful thing happened: Sometimes the patient was cured of his or her disease or condition!

With further experimentation, Abrams developed a machine that was designed to duplicate the frequency signature—what we could call a complex carrier modulated EM waveform. Abrams discovered that if he had a sample of the patient’s hair, blood, or saliva, he could determine the diagnosis of the patient and treat him or her with just the EM waveform that would arrest the progression of the disease. Abrams abandoned his traditional medical practice and began to manufacture the strange

“black boxes” for other practitioners to use.

The path-Oscilloclast was Abrams’s crowning technological achievement. It looked like a big Moog synthesizer (for you Keith Emerson fans) with a bunch of wires and row upon row of knobs that were used to tune in to and isolate the specific frequencies to be used in the cure. One particularly enthusiastic owner of the path-Oscilloclast was curing many disease conditions, including cases of cancer.

This doctor was excited by the results that he was able to get with Abrams’s radionics technology. Then one day he looked down and realized that the machine had never been plugged in!

The machine hadn’t been doing anything at all; the subconscious mind of the practitioner was the agent of the healing force. The patterns of your thoughts represent information stored as complex electrical potentials. You can imprint your thought forms onto a scalar wave and deliver the product at a distance.

It is my contention that you can learn to consciously direct your focused intent into the energy of the vacuum. *You can structure it and create an engine of consciousness that sustains it.* Your amplified creative thought activity builds and sustains a unique morphic field. This template or grid of your creative intent can be imprinted with the mechanism or design of your choosing.

Human intent can be psychically directed into the medium of the vacuum. This thought pattern can then draw more energy unto itself from the torsion fields present there, thus creating what Bearden called in his book *Excalibur Briefing* an “artificial active potential.” This focused intent can

occur in the blink of an eye and then be released to the parallel processor of the subconscious mind. If you do this with enough subtlety and with a certain cultivated sense of nonattachment, you perform a weak quantum measurement. This weak or egoless thought wave doesn't cause a collapse of the quantum wave function.

I think that perhaps our DNA is an antenna that picks up information from our environment, including our beliefs and our emotions. It then conveys that quantum potential to our bodies. When we unfold the imprinted information into our *bioplasmic field*, we then organize it into our bodies. We can literally manifest diseases in our bodies or not based upon what we are congruent or not congruent with. To say this in another way, whatever we suppress will imprint into our morphic field and be impressed onto our biology. That is why we really have to watch what we think.

In theory, you could simply reverse-engineer, or phase-conjugate, the disease pattern. You take it out of phase and then you have the healing pattern for the specific disease, which is just an electromagnetic wave signature. You can then "dial in" the harmonic signature or pattern of the distant target and then pop it back into the electromagnetic spectrum at the target.

In order to affect a healing, the antenna of the DNA would pick up the quantum potential for healing from the *zero-point field*. You would decipher it at the subconscious level as a bidirectional EM energy signature. The deciphered information would then be integrated into the level of your biophotons, creating greater coherence. Theoretically, the disease pattern could then be reversed. When you do this, you start to bridge the gap between a mere conceptual framework and a workable or engineerable outcome. If you do this, you will create a shared reality where it is more likely that you will be able to do some of these things, such as instantaneous healings and other miracles.

I think all our healing models are wrong, or at the very least incomplete. They are based on the standard models of physics that do not get you to miraculous instances.

They do not increase the likelihood that you will access miracles. However, this physics does. This physics says that not only are miracles likely but they are probable. If you start to explain this to people, then you are taking it down to a level that is applicable to the average person in everyday life.

If you do this consistently, you will become more consciously aware of your ability to direct healing energies in this manner. With continued practice, you will begin to function from the awareness of your heart field, which is a unique biodynamic torsion field. When you do this, you begin to gain access to hyperdimensional states of reality. *This explanation helps define and make accessible to anyone the mechanisms behind miracles.*

A seminar participant recently sent this healing story experience to the Matrix Energetics message board:

*I was the redheaded lady in the blue-green knit top whom you called up when you asked for people with gut problems at the Denver Level 3 seminar. Since you didn't ask me what was wrong, I wanted to share.*

*At the time you asked for gut problems, I was in an active IBS attack complete with spasms and chronic discomfort. I have had gut problems since I was born (colic eight hours a day for six months), but didn't begin the full-fledged IBS until after an ovarian cyst removal twenty years ago this year. Eating out, particularly on trips, has been really difficult because it's been hard to stick to exactly what will keep my gut happy (or at least merely grumpy).*

*When you attached that (imaginary) copper line, connected it to the*

*“make-believe” radionics device and turned it on . . . I just felt a whole-body field permeate me and then, boom . . . I was on the floor. When I could finally get back up and go back to my seat, I felt my gut relax for the first time in two decades. I could literally feel the inflammation dissipating. It was amazing. I'm not sure my gut has ever felt that calm.*

*I tried it out on Saturday just to see what would happen. We stayed an extra day and went up to Echo Lake and Mt. Evans. There's a lodge by the lake that sells buffalo chili. Yup! I tried it with no ill effects. Yum!*

## THE SCIENCE OF INVISIBILITY

It was a sunny summer day in Seattle, June 1989. I was in my third year of an intense four-year program at Bastyr. At least this year I was allowed to see patients as an intern at the student clinic. My fifteen years as a chiropractor definitely helped when it came to my clinical skills set. One thing that Bastyr did not teach, and you had to learn for yourself, was the fine art of rapport. It was something that over the years in practice you mastered—if not your business failed. I learned early in my medical career that if people tended to like you as a person, they were more likely to trust you as their doctor.

That morning I had seen four patients on my shift at the university clinic. One had allergies and wanted advice on her diet. The second patient was trying to lose weight and had a history of adult onset diabetes. She was scheduled for some blood tests so that I, in tandem with the licensed naturopathic physician overseeing my shift, could formulate a treatment plan. The third patient was a follow-up visit for lower back pain that had greatly improved since his last visit. The fourth patient was brought in by his mother for advice on the possible links between his so-called ADD

and his typical junk food diet. Finally finished, all my charting done, I left Bastyr for my afternoon private practice as a state licensed chiropractor.

Chiropractic care: is that what I was doing now? Frankly, I didn't know what to call what I did anymore. It would still be another five years before I realized that this weird phenomenon that occurred when I touched people was actually reproducible and teachable. Since that event, detailed in my first book, things had never been the same. These days it was rare for me to have to physically adjust someone anymore.

The simple act of touching them lightly would cause their spine to shift to a healthier position, and their bones and muscles would realign themselves.

Talk about an easy way to make a living! Thank goodness for that, I thought to myself.

School was so intense that I sometimes thought the experience would be the death of me. It was a real joy to go to my private practice and watch what sometimes looked and felt like miracles occurring.

I had just finished lunch and was eagerly awaiting the arrival of my two o'clock appointment, a new patient. Two o'clock rolled around and then 2:15. It looked like she was going to be a no-show. No matter; it was such a beautiful day that I relished the thought of some peaceful time off from my hectic schedule. I decided to take advantage of the sunshine and went outside to lie on the hood of my '66 GTO, basking myself in the warm rays of the sun. Soon I was drifting off into dreamland.

Suddenly a bright light intruded on my inner awareness. No, it wasn't that the sun had just reemerged from behind a cloud. This was something else entirely!

A bright form in the shape of a man appeared to my inner sight. Apparently this apparition had not a moment to waste as it resolutely informed me that in order to heal others, I should "treat with counter-rotating fields" and "study phase-conjugation." No sooner had this been said than the Angel—or whatever it was—disappeared, leaving me in the dark! It has taken me nearly ten years to piece together the beginnings of an explanation for what was so quickly and mysteriously imparted to me on that day.

Counter-rotating fields? What could that possibly mean? Then I remembered my fascination with the Philadelphia Experiment when I was much younger. Could that provide a clue to what the Angel meant? And phase conjugation; what the heck is that? Wait a minute; there was that guy, Tom Bearden, who talked about scalar electromagnetics in the 1980s at my spiritual community in Montana. His talk was about the weaponization of some strange concepts in a physics I had never heard of—scalar physics, wasn't that it? Didn't he say something about phase-conjugation and how this stuff could be used to heal disease as well?

I got all excited about the idea and resolved to pursue it—the best-laid plans of mice and medical students! Taking an average of thirty-one credit hours plus time spent in the student clinic left no time for anything but sleep. A medical student is more or less in permanent survival mode, not exactly a conducive mind-set for learning anything else outside of the rigidly defined curriculum. It was not until last year that my life and schedule stabilized enough to fully delve into the mysteries the Angel had imparted. What I gradually found out became the basis for much of the material in this book you now hold in your hands.

I believe this overlooked science of scalar electromagnetics is what the shining figure on that sunny, fateful day was referring to. The Philadelphia Experiment, even though perhaps more legend than fact, provides a powerful metaphor, as well as morphic field, from which many useful Matrix Energetics concepts can be derived. Read on and I think you will understand why this is an important topic for this book and for you!

When I was about twelve years old, I remember reading in my local newspaper, the *Daily Oklahoman*, about the Philadelphia Experiment. The funny thing is that if it occurred at all, and I tend to believe that it did, the experiment occurred in 1943! It makes little sense that an article about it would be in the morning newspaper in the 1960s. But that's what I clearly remember.

When I read the newspaper article, there were just enough details and talk about invisibility—and vague rumors of secret government experiments—that I resolved to find out more about this mysterious subject. I went to my local library and checked out the book *The Philadelphia Experiment: Project Invisibility* by William Moore and Charles Berlitz. In their book, Nikola Tesla was named as one of the scientists who worked on the Philadelphia Experiment, so I returned to my local library to read about him as well. I cannot remember the title of the book I read, but I was absolutely fascinated by his life story, which left an indelible imprint on my young and very curious mind.

I also had to go back and read everything I could about this eccentric genius in pursuit of my quest to understand what I had been given that day as I lay on the hood of my car. For the last ten years, I had searched to begin to put

together the very important pieces to the puzzle I had been given. Little did I know then that some forty years after reading that intriguing newspaper article, my research concerning the Angel's message would lead me right back to the very same books in search of answers!

## **WHAT WAS THE PHILADELPHIA EXPERIMENT?**

*The "Philadelphia Experiment" is the name that has commonly been given to an alleged top-secret experiment conducted by the United States Navy in 1943*

*in which the destroyer escort, USS Eldridge, outfitted with several tons of specialized electronics equipment capable of creating a tremendous pulsating magnetic field around itself, was first made invisible and then transported, in a matter of moments, from the Philadelphia Navy Yard to the Norfolk Docks and back again, a total distance of over 400 miles (640 kilometers).<sup>1</sup>*

According to at least two of the many and varied reports, a nearby merchant ship crew purportedly witnessed the destroyer's arrival in Norfolk, via teleportation, and its subsequent disappearance, although later investigations and research could not substantiate the witnesses' claims.

Morris K. Jessup, a bootstrap astronomer and ufologist whose involvement in the experiment was in itself quite mysterious, claims the operation was a secret experiment conducted by U.S. Navy to "test out the effects of a strong magnetic field on a manned surface craft. This was to be accomplished by means of magnetic generators (degaussers)." In other words, the object was to render the navy ship seemingly invisible so that it could get close enough to other (enemy) craft or explosive devices to destroy them before being destroyed. The USS *Eldridge's*

"teleportation" may actually have been the accidental "result of this trial invisibility run, involving a related time-warp phenomena," according to Jessup.<sup>2</sup>

The experiment seemingly generated a hazy, green, luminous mist (similar to reports of the Bermuda Triangle fog) that enveloped the entire ship: both

the ship and its personnel began to disappear from sight, leaving only the destroyer's waterline visible.

## **THE “REAL” PHILADELPHIA EXPERIMENT?**

Bob Beckwith is an innovator who has patented many electrical systems over his long career. In 1942 he invented a device called the “frequency-shift keyed transfer trip equipment.” This technology, Beckwith claims, was utilized by the navy in an attempt to defeat a new type of German mine. It was hoped that Beckwith's device would help enable detection of the German mines at a safe enough distance to avoid or detonate them safely, and it was this technology of his that was the prelude to the alleged Philadelphia Experiment. So far, this seems somewhat congruent with Jessup's version.

However, Beckwith believes that the *real* Philadelphia Experiment was initially conducted in the Long Island Sound, utilizing an experimental minesweeper called IX-97. The description of this experiment also duplicates many classic elements of the Philadelphia Experiment legend. Beckwith believes that the lack of traceable or verifiable information associated with the Philadelphia Experiment is an example of deliberate obfuscation and disinformation by the Office of Naval Research.

According to Beckwith, three special-looking generators were driven by the ship's power. Controls for these generators were housed in a second cabin at the stern of the ship. Beckwith believed that three-phase currents were placed through the wires of the generators at a very low frequency, most likely at 7.83Hz—the Schumann or so-called earth-resonance frequency. These time-travel generators consisted of three single-phase units placed 120 electrical degrees apart. Each unit was approximately five feet tall by two feet in diameter. The generators put out a low voltage but emitted more than a thousand amps.<sup>3</sup>

Beckwith's *real* Philadelphia Experiment aboard the IX-97 was actually a time-travel teleportation by Edward Teller—a refinement and elaboration on Nikola Tesla's 1907 experiment where he allegedly moved an object along a laboratory bench. Tesla then turned on his electrical device and the object moved back in time to its original position.<sup>4</sup>

Teleportation? Invisibility? Time travel? What does all this have to do with Matrix Energetics? You can step into the field of consciousness that Matrix Energetics has built because we have said, “What if there were no rules?” What if we had a rule that said there are no rules? The Philadelphia Experiment has not been substantiated in any official manner; however, the story itself and its nature suggests that “the rules” we assume to be operating and in place may not be all there is to know—or all that we already know. That there are no physical laws is essentially what yogi and spiritual philosopher Sri Aurobindo taught. He said they were more like suggestions. I think it’s perfectly okay to get a little bit fuzzy about the physics.

**If the laws of physics are not really laws, but more like suggestions, it is far more likely that you will witness a miracle.**

There is at least suggestive evidence that we have technologies that operate from principles that utilize electrogravitics or antigravity, just to consider two examples.

If this is true, I believe that consciousness comes first and technology follows. If we have material technologies that can do these things, we can do them as individuals as well. We inherently possess the *spiritual technology* for levitation, invisibility, and miracles of all shapes and sizes. ***This technology of consciousness resides right***

***within the torsion field of our heart and is linked to our bioplasmic energy fields.*** I believe it is the physics Jesus utilized. It is the physics of Tesla as well. So that is what we are beginning to teach with Matrix Energetics. The cool thing is that not too many people are teaching this. So what do we have? We have an unpolluted morphic field that we can build however we choose. Why not allow for the possibility of invisibility or time travel—or any other useful miracle?

## **DIVIDING SPACE**

In her book *The Philadelphia Experiment Murder*, Alexandra Bruce examines the fascinating book *Hypotheses* by Beckwith. Among the other intriguing concepts Bruce covers, she notes that Beckwith’s book develops

a complex perspective that offers readers insight into the actual *physics of miracles*. Bruce explains that all atoms in universal space are energetically connected by what are called “strong nuclear force lines,” which literally hold the universe together and function as a medium for the transmission of all frequencies. She states that these lines of strong nuclear force “can be broken with the application of what is called ‘a three-phase neutrino field,’ which in turn creates a bubble of ‘divided space.’”<sup>5</sup>

Beckwith further explains:

*A space divided from universal space can be created by causing a small percentage of neutrinos [that permeate all matter in our Universe] passing through the space to travel in a vortex rotating at a frequency in the order of 7.5 Hertz. Strong force lines at the boundaries of the space are interrupted so long as the vortex exists. This twisting field is necessary to break the field of strong force lines between all matter in universal space and to create an inner space separated from universal space.*

*If a rotating magnetic field [a key principle in the fundamental operation of the alternating-current—electric—motor] operated in synchronism with the Earth’s 7.32-Hz fundamental resonance, objects within one such space can be moved with respect to our “universal space” when power is applied. The divided space is then free of forces of inertia or gravity. Once the space is divided, objects within the space may levitate, teleport, or move in time.*

*Divided inner space can pass through universal space but is dependent on the drag and surface sharpness between spaces being low enough to prevent piercing the shell of the missing strong force lines. Electromagnetic waves—including visible light and infrared heat—can pass through the boundaries of the divided spaces.<sup>6</sup>*

The book *Secrets of the Unified Field* by physicist theologian Joseph P. Farrell describes how the Philadelphia Experiment was probably done with torsion fields.

Torsion fields create a hyperdimensional geometry, which has access to extradimensional realities. When you master the unified field of the heart, you can actually fold space-time locally. If you do that, then you can

theoretically disappear from amid your enemies or reappear somewhere else.

## **METAMATERIALS AND INVISIBILITY: FACT OR FICTION?**

James Bond's Aston Martin V12 Vanquish in the movie *Die Another Day* was able to activate an invisible mode by projecting images photographed by tiny cameras on the car that were then projected onto the car's light-emitting polymer skin. A fantastic notion? Read on.

*In an example of life imitating art, professor Naoki Kawakami of the Tachi Laboratory at the University of Tokyo [along with two other professors] has developed a way to render a person partially invisible by photographing the scenery behind a person and then projecting that background image directly onto the person's clothes or onto a screen in front of him. As seen from the front, it appears as if the person has become transparent, that light has somehow passed right through the person's body. This process is called*

*“optical camouflage.”<sup>7</sup>*

Admittedly, this is a far cry from the invisibility cloak worn by Harry Potter.

Author Syed Alam interviewed professor Susumu Tachi, another of the three professors now famous for their 2003 optical camouflage breakthrough, and gives us more insight into how this works:

*In reality, the optical camouflage cloak is anything but invisible. It is made up of “retro-reflective material” coated with tiny light-reflective beads that cover its entire length. The cloak is also fitted with cameras that project what is at the back of the wearer onto the front, and vice versa. The effect is to make the wearer blend with his background.<sup>8</sup>*

The science behind this is, in some ways, quite easy to understand, although it requires a radical shift in how we utilize our laws of optics. It has to do with light refraction and the visible spectrum through which humans literally “see” the world.

The portion of wavelengths in the electromagnetic radiation that humans perceive is known as the visible spectrum. The visible spectrum is actually quite a narrow band of the entire spectrum, with (human) visible wavelengths ranging from about 350 to 400 nanometers (violet and purple light), to 700 to 750 nanometers (deep red light).

As science has already demonstrated, what is beyond our narrow visual range does not exist simply because we cannot see it or utilize it without aid—or have yet to understand how to work with it. Consider that infrared wavelengths lie between the visible spectrum and the invisible microwave wavelengths of the electromagnetic spectrum. We cannot see infrared wavelengths, and yet along with other animals, plants, stars, planets, and so on, we emit these “far” infrared wavelengths (those farthest from the visible spectrum) as thermal output. “Near”

infrared wavelengths, closest to the visible spectrum, are how our television remote communicates with the television—among a host of other uses. An interesting property of near-infrared light is that it has a longer wavelength than visible light (measuring approximately 750 nanometers to 1 millimeter), so it behaves differently when it encounters objects that get in its way.

Working with the larger light spectrum, scientists at UC Berkeley have been devising computer simulations that would allow them to alter the direction and properties of visible and invisible light. A recent article in the *UC Berkeley News* states:

*Scientists at the University of California, Berkeley, have for the first time engineered 3-D materials that can reverse the natural direction of visible and near-infrared light, a development that could help form the basis for higher resolution optical imaging, nano-circuits for high-powered computers, and to the delight of science-fiction and fantasy buffs, cloaking devices that could render objects invisible to the human eye.<sup>9</sup>*

What are these 3-D materials? They are *metamaterials*: substances that have optical properties not found in nature.

*Metamaterials are created by embedding tiny implants within a substance that forces electromagnetic waves to bend in unorthodox ways. At Duke University, scientists embedded tiny electrical circuits within copper bands that are arranged in flat, concentric circles (somewhat resembling the coils of an electric oven). The result was a sophisticated mixture of ceramic, Teflon, fiber composites, and metal components.*<sup>10</sup>

Materials found in nature have a positive refractive index: “a measure of how much electromagnetic waves are bent when moving from one medium to another.”

All metamaterials have *negative refraction*. This property is derived from its structure rather than its composition. In order to achieve negative refraction, the metamaterial’s structural array “must be smaller than the electromagnetic wavelength being used.” It isn’t surprising then that scientists have thus far had more success manipulating wavelengths in the longer microwave band.<sup>11</sup>

Michio Kaku, in his book *Physics of the Impossible*, explains further that

“metamaterials can continuously alter and bend the path of microwaves so that they flow around a cylinder, for example, essentially making everything inside the cylinder invisible to microwaves. If the metamaterial can eliminate all reflection and shadows, then it can render an object totally invisible to that form of radiation.”<sup>12</sup>

Scientists currently working with these metamaterials would be the first to tell you that these new engineered materials offer the possibility for us to have control over matter in seemingly magical ways, and to rewrite the laws of optics or acoustics in ways we had not even conceived of previously. This is the model that is Matrix Energetics: the rules are only suggestions, and there is so much more for us to learn, explore, understand, and imagine as possible. From our currently coveted belief structures, we code invisibility or levitation or spontaneous bone realignment as miracles and out of the realms of possibility. But even without having a complete scientific explanation at hand for these so-called miracles, we have already delved into the magic and mystery of the world and our consciousness

enough to know that we are only on the tip of discovering the unknown but not the unknowable.

## **A VERY DARK MATTER INDEED**

In our solar system, the movement of the planets closely conforms to Newton's gravitational laws. Because of this, it was assumed that the farther we moved out into the universe, the slower the rate of the movement in the spiral arms of the galaxies would be. In the late 1920s, astronomer Jan Oort was surprised to measure that orbital velocity of the stars in the Milky Way do not decrease in velocity the farther they get from the galactic center. In 1933 Fritz Zwicky noted the same anomaly in galaxies forming galactic clusters and suggested it was due to an unidentified "dark matter," which balanced out the mass at the centers of galaxies.

Astronomers have now calculated that based upon the predictions of the big bang theory, less than 1 percent of physical matter can be accounted for. That's right: 99

percent of the known universe cannot be accounted for. And I thought I had math problems! This invisible matter was dubbed "dark matter" by scientists not because it was evil but because it could not be measured and is not currently thought to be part of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Since dark matter and energy fill 99 percent of the universe, it would be simplistic to assume that this percentage would be composed of only one type of particle. It appears that dark matter is composed of massive superparticles. There is probably a great diversity of particles and energies included in dark matter and energy—including exotic particles and energies that escape the imagination of both physicists and metaphysicists at present.

Author Jay Alfred speculates that perhaps physicists' dark matter and metaphysicists' subtle matter and energy, sometimes called the luminiferous ether, may be one and the same. Alfred further speculates that *chi* and *prana* are likely to be categories of dark matter. Alfred wonders if pranic globules, which are more visible on sunny days, might be a form of energy exuded from the corona of an invisible sun composed of dark matter. H. P. Blavatsky, cofounder of the Theosophical Society, often spoke in her

writings of a mysterious sun behind the sun. Tesla also spoke of the zero-point energy, a mysterious sun behind the sun that was the source of the zero-point field.

I believe that the bioplasmic field probably contains large amounts of what scientists call dark matter. This dark matter could just as well be called invisible matter since our current scientific instruments cannot detect it, but due to the gravity-lensing effect, we know that it must be there. I have read many books on the rather esoteric subject of invisibility in an attempt to formulate a conceptual model for how something like it might be possible. Human invisibility has been written about for centuries. Many of the sources that I read, such as *The Golden Dawn* by Israel Regardie, had a common thread: wrapping the body in a dark mist or cloud that would render the practitioner invisible to the naked eye. I believe that this dark mist that is spoken about may very well be a “cloud” of dark matter, which through meditation, visualization, and concentration can be cultivated and utilized.

This dark matter is also probably synonymous with the concept and phenomena of *chi* or *prana*. There are many ancient traditions and practices that have to do with the cultivation and storing of *chi*. I believe dark bioplasmic matter may be, over time and with practice, cultivated and stored in the auric field. This dark matter, when enveloped around the practitioner, could then be at least theoretically utilized to render them invisible.

## **WHAT IS PLASMA?**

In his book *Between the Moon and Earth*, Alfred writes: *Plasma, which is rare in our immediate environment, is the dominant state of matter in the visible universe. Plasma makes up more than 99% of our visible universe! The visible universe is, in fact, a plasma universe with bodies of plasma in a pervasive cloud of diffused plasma.*<sup>13</sup>

A plasma is produced when positive and negatively charged ions become separated and generate electric fields. The field accelerates the charged particles to high velocities, thus creating a dense magnetic field. It is thought by some that these fields are composed of dark matter. Many

scientists believe that dark matter is found largely in some form of plasma.<sup>14</sup>

## **BIOPLASMIC FIELDS: THE HUMAN AURA**

*The bioplasmic body, or subtle energy, is a complex structure that penetrates and surrounds the physical body, i.e., both internally and externally. Ancient esoteric tradition speaks of an ethereal or pranic body, a concept that is very close to that of bioplasma and the bioplasmic body.<sup>15</sup>*

*Plasma metaphysics is the application of plasma and dark matter physics to the study of our high-energy subtle bodies and their corresponding environments . . . Many metaphysicists report that the ovoid of the aura is wrapped by a membrane or a sheath. Surface currents on the shell or sheath separate the magma ovoid from the surrounding magma environment. The sheath acts as a protective electromagnetic shield whose strength and polarity can be adjusted by an act of will by the owner of the body, using focused visualizations and other techniques common in meditation. This offers protection against electromagnetic and other intrusions.<sup>16</sup>*

All these properties were described and documented more than two thousand years ago, mainly in Hindu and Chinese acupuncture literature, but they were also alluded to in Buddhist and Christian scriptures and literature—long before the age of electricity and magnetism, which only emerged during the eighteenth century.

## **ACHIEVING HUMAN INVISIBILITY**

In the late nineteenth century and early twentieth century, there arose a philosophical and spiritual development organization known as the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn. (A modern order continues to this day.) In its original manuscripts, there is something called a “Ritual of Invisibility.” The ritual offers specific, detailed instructions in order to achieve the “shroud of invisibility”—the magic of concealment—also referred to as a cloud or veil. More than two hundred years earlier, Paracelsus expressed the idea of concealment in his *Philosophia Sagax*:

*Visible bodies may be made invisible, or covered, in the same way as night covers a man and makes him invisible; or as he would become invisible if he were put behind a wall; and as Nature may render something visible or invisible by such means, likewise a visible substance may be covered with an invisible substance, and be made invisible by art.17*

This idea appears frequently in folklore as well. The cloud is usually referred to esoterically as a garment of some kind which, when worn, conceals the hero from view. Of course, what comes to mind with this idea in our culture is Harry Potter's cloak of invisibility.

If electrons have the power to absorb light photons when they are bound into atoms, there is no reason why they should not have the same power when they are free. And the cloud is just a cloud of free electrons or bioplasma. Since the energy gap of the cloud is apparently quite small, all the photons that enter it are absorbed, whereas some are usually reflected from more ordinary substances. And with zero reflection, we get zero visibility.

Since electrons are the building blocks of the atom, and since the atom is the building block of matter, one can easily see how a "cloud" of electrons could be formed into solid matter by mind power. But what you may not see is how such a cloud could make a human being invisible. The fact that the cloud is a cloud of electrons is the key to its power of making things invisible. Scientists know that such a cloud of electrons will absorb all light waves entering it, reducing the magnitude of reflected light to zero and effectively concealing whatever it surrounds.18

## **CREATE THE CLOUD EXERCISE**

Here is an exercise for developing invisibility, manifestation, and other *siddhis* (or powers). Author Steve Richards gives an exercise similar to what I have outlined here, but my reference for this exercise is taken from my personal experience with an alchemical exercise I have worked on for a number of years. This was given to students of my spiritual teacher and friend, Elizabeth Clare Prophet. My original exposure to the cloud exercise came from the book *Saint Germain on Alchemy* by Mark Prophet.19 The exercise below is my own adaptation of what I learned from my spiritual

training, as well as elements that Richards elucidates in his book, which I have excerpted in part for elements of the exercise below.

### **STEP ONE**

The first step is to construct your laboratory. This laboratory is none other than your sacred space in the torus field of your heart. When you have developed a momentum at this, all you will have to do is think about moving into the alchemical laboratory of your heart and you will be there.

The cloud is composed of subtle etheric substance. According to Saint Germain, you can concentrate the cloud through a passive act of will. He states that the cloud should be formed of a milky white radiance similar to the star clusters of the Milky Way.

### **STEP TWO**

With that taken care of, the next step is to sit quietly and comfortably, and direct your eyes to some single place in the room. This is necessary so that the cloud may collect at the place where you are staring. The effect of directed attention is cumulative. The longer you look in the same direction, the more definite the cloud you are building becomes.

### **STEP THREE**

By slightly defocusing your eyes, you will enter into what mystic Don Juan's favorite student Carlos Castaneda calls "Second Attention." This altered state will enhance your ability to see the cloud. Collecting the cloud is of no use to you if you cannot see it after it has been collected. Therefore, this defocusing is absolutely essential to the technique. Now let your attention drop down out of your head, into your chest, and then into the space of your heart.

### **STEP FOUR**

Relax, staying focused in a calm manner on your intent for the cloud to be brought into manifestation. In order to enhance your ability to concentrate the energy, mentally circumscribe a ring of light around you at the height of

your chest. This ring will aid you in your efforts to condense the force of the cloud.

### **STEP FIVE**

When you think you are getting results, it is time to intensify the building of the cloud. Let the cloud expand out from the torsion field of your heart in all directions simultaneously so that the force of the cloud pushes against the barrier of the ring.

Begin to draw large handfuls of invisible or dark matter into your ring from the surrounding atmosphere.

You may glance up above the cloud and then bring your eyes down, willing that the energy above the cloud be added to the energy of the cloud itself. Then do the same thing by glancing below the cloud and to either side of it. Remember as you do this that your willing is not to involve eyestrain in any way. The willing must be entirely mental. Remain relaxed and above all, “stay out of your head”!

### **STEP SIX**

Once you have formed a cloud that is quite definite and that contains a great deal of dark matter, the final step is to draw it around yourself and blot yourself out of view.

Once again, the technique is just the logical result of everything I have said thus far.

You must produce a cloud large enough to enshroud the human body, and then will that it come toward you and surround you. Become lost within the billowing folds of its milky radiance if you wish. The practice of forming and learning to sustain the creative energy of the cloud will greatly enhance the power of your creative manifestations. With practice, you may be able to cloak yourself within it and become invisible to the naked eye!

### **ACCESSING THE UNIFIED FIELD OF CONSCIOUSNESS**

When we are connected in this way, we have created a special unified field of consciousness. Actually, what we have done is create a special relativity that, through the heart, accesses the unified field of consciousness. At this point, everything becomes a pattern of oneness, and if anything does not match this pattern, simply rotate the consciousness until it matches. Take all these complex thoughts, interactions, and complexities and get into the simple state where change occurs. It is what we call in Matrix Energetics “shifting your observational frame of reference.” There is actually a workable physics that supports all this, which has been utilized in projects such as the Philadelphia Experiment.

In yogic tradition, the mastery of invisibility (as well as other siddhis) is said to be controlled by the power of the heart chakra. I believe that the heart chakra possesses a right, or clockwise, spin. It is my theory, after much contemplation, that the bioplasmic field of the aura possesses a counterclockwise spin. In order to get the changes we are talking about, like in the Philadelphia Experiment, you must shift the frame of your reference to your heart. *When you master the unified field of the heart, you can actually fold space-time locally.*

You can learn how to shift within yourself, into the field of your heart chakra, and from there you have access to interdimensional space. When you start to shift that torus tube, the torsion field of the heart’s energy starts to spin in a clockwise direction. As the energy reverses direction, the torus starts to expand. (That is exactly what the magnetic field or Tesla coil would look like.) Now what you do is start spinning the auric field rapidly in a counterclockwise direction simultaneously.

This activates a unique bidirectional set of counter-rotating bioplasmic energy fields.

Now you have two points of reference for hyperdimensional space, and that is enough to collapse space-time where you are.

Add to these counter-rotating auric fields the mastery of the previous cloud exercise, and I believe you can attract dark matter from the realms of the bioluminescent ether to your spinning field. This dark matter, with visualization and practice, can enfold your human aura. Since this

bioplasma is invisible, you are cloaking yourself in an invisible substance, which is increasingly magnetized to the expanding, spinning field of your heart. Perhaps when these counter-rotating energy fields reach the appropriate vibrational rate, your aura might radiate bands of energy into the ultraviolet spectrum, which is beyond the bandwidth of human visible perception.

You are now starting to understand how the power to do many of these things resides within the unified field, the torsion field of our heart. Basically, torsion fields interact with the spins of particles. In the atom, the nucleus, the protons, and the neutrons all have spins. Torsion fields create a hyperdimensional geometry, which has access to extradimensional realities. When you master the unified field of the heart, you can actually fold space-time locally. It is all based upon what you engineer in consciousness.

What you engineer in consciousness is then what you can rely upon. You engineer a reality. That is the principle behind engineering space-time and why Einstein's unified field theory—though incomplete—was engineerable. When you are holding things in a dimensional matrix within your heart, that thought-form or concept can imprint upon the counter-rotating fields formed by the torus field of your heart. This electromagnetic spherical field of the heart can then interact with the bioplasmic fields of your aura. This consciously engineered interdimensional matrix can access hyperspace dimensions. This is Philadelphia Experiment technology.

## **TALES OF INVISIBILITY FROM THE FIELD**

I was on my way to the Children's Program seminar in Los Angeles, driving 80

miles an hour in a convertible, holding on to my Indiana Jones fedora so it would not blow away. Until then I had been writing this book nonstop, holed up in a beautiful resort hotel in Redondo Beach. In order to attend the program, I had to drive an hour each way, and I somewhat resented the intrusion into my writing time.

My guides had told me that it was important for me to attend, however, so I was on my way. "What could possibly show up at a Children's Program that

I would need for the book?” I wondered. When I arrived, my daughter Justice was already presiding over a group of youngsters and their childlike parents.

A frequent seminar attendee named Alejandro approached me. He had brought his whole family to this seminar. He introduced me to his family and said he was delighted to see me. He then said mysteriously, “I have something that I must tell you. It makes no sense to me, but my inner guidance insists that you must have this information.”

He went on to tell me an incredible story. A number of years ago, Alejandro lived in a house that could only be accessed by crossing a suspension bridge. His cousin, who was staying with Alejandro, was in trouble with a gang that wanted to kill him.

The gang came looking for him at Alejandro’s house. Hearing the gang’s approach, the cousin ran out of the house and started to cross the suspension bridge just as the gang came around the house looking for him.

The cousin knew with certainty that if he were to get caught by the gang on the bridge, he would have no escape and would be killed. It was a really long suspension bridge, so he reached into his pocket and pulled out a prayer to Mother Mary (the *Magnificat*). As he prayed to her, a bubble suddenly popped up around him and this strange green fog filled the space in the bubble, and he became invisible.

The gang members looked at the suspension bridge where they had seen him running, but they didn’t see anybody there. The cousin got across the bridge and popped back into visibility again. They saw him then, but he was too far away for them to catch him. They were baffled as to how he could have disappeared and then reappeared. They never bothered him again. I heard this story and thought, “Oh, I am going to have to include that in the book—that’s why I’m here. Here is a personal example of the Philadelphia Experiment.”

**WHAT? AM I INVISIBLE OR SOMETHING?**

My son Nate and I have programmed our Matrix Energetics medallions for invisibility. We did this last year before a seminar with more than five hundred people coming into town to attend. I was overwhelmed and a little out of sorts because all these people would be focusing on me. I felt funny, so I created a field around the medallion that enabled me to step into a place where I did not feel the energy. I could rotate my personal energy field out of phase with it.

Nate and I went to our favorite Mexican restaurant, where they know us and know what we are ordering before we are seated because we eat there so frequently.

We sat there for forty-five minutes before we realized why nobody had come over to take our order or acknowledge our presence. We had programmed our medallions for invisibility. So we mentally clicked off the program to allow us to be visible, and almost instantly a server came to our table and said, “Hello, Dr. Bartlett. When did you arrive?” It can be weird—and useful.

### **A SEMINAR PARTICIPANT’S STORY ON INVISIBILITY**

*During my first conference, I thought it wise to share some of what I found interesting prior to the ME training with others. I had a picture, which I had downloaded off the internet, of a young man in Japan, who was wearing a light green parka, facing the observer or camera, while standing on a street. The parka was coated with a film referred to as “the Invisibility Cloak.” This film is designed to allow light to pass through it, and that of any surface to which it is applied. In the photo, you could see three other young men walking at a distance behind the person wearing the parka. Their images showed clearly through the parka, as did the street and all the associated physical details.*

*I gave a copy of this to Richard, showed it to several others, and gave another copy to a lady named Christa. Then the strangest thing happened. She told me she had had an experience where a woman raised her hand in front of her, and Christa could see through this woman’s hand. To be certain that this was a real event, she asked the woman to raise her hand a second*

*time. And again she was able to see through the person's hand as if it were not there.*

*When Christa told me this story, the three of us were about to eat lunch. I always bless water as part of my eating ceremony, and as I was doing this with my eyes closed, I noticed that I could see the water bottles and glasses clearly with my eyes closed. I could also see through the space these objects occupied and out beyond this construct to another indeterminate zone. "Houston, the Matrix has landed, and it is trying to grow roots!"*

*— EP, Matrix Energetics Certified Practitioner*

## **HIDING IN PLAIN SIGHT**

A female seminar participant once came up to me and told me she was so glad that I was teaching about invisibility. She had previously been to a seminar where I spoke about the science of the Philadelphia Experiment and its possible application as a spiritual technology. I had given an exercise about accessing the torsion field of the heart, similar to the one included in this book. I then discussed how counter-rotating torsion fields in the human aura could conceivably duplicate the technology of invisibility demonstrated in the story of the Philadelphia Experiment.

She went on to tell me her story. Sometime after the torsion-field seminar, she was walking down the street in her hometown and saw her ex-boyfriend heading toward her from the opposite direction. If ever there was someone she wished to become invisible to, it was him. Her breakup with him had not gone well, and he carried a grudge. Remembering what I had taught her, she dropped down into the sacred space of her heart and began the exercise of creating counter-spinning twin torsion fields. To her absolute amazement, her ex-boyfriend walked right by her and never even noticed her! She was so grateful for the information that I had shared with her about invisibility.

## **CLOSING THOUGHTS ABOUT MIRACLES**

I am not saying that you are going to be able to become invisible just by reading the information in this chapter or perform miracles of healing just

because you have a desire to do so. It does not matter. What matters is if one person can do any of it, and can do it one time, then you have access to it, and it becomes more and more likely as a weighted probability that you will be able to do it as this field continues to expand and grow.

There is a true religion and true science, but they are one and the same: the unified field of consciousness. Now, understanding that, you have broken the paradigm. You are now ready to actually play because from this point of reference, it does not matter what you do. You are making it up. If you are making it up, all you have to do is be congruent and coherent.

This is spiritual technology that then is engineerable to be actually workable as a physical manifestation. Tesla and others have done it. By the way, when I say

“spiritual technology,” there is nothing *but* spirit. There is no physical. There is no matter. It is just spiritual and consciousness through Heart. That is it.

**17**

## **SOLVING THE MYSTERY OF LEVITATION**

Matrix Energetics seems to mine the same scientific terrain as that of the secret ether physics. If our secret government has spaceships that can rise up in the air, using secret or black-op physics principles, these elite technologies do not seem to rely on the crippling assumptions promulgated by Einstein’s special and general theories of relativity. After reading all that I recently have on these subjects, I suspect relativity is a well-sustained scientific blind alley. I am thinking there may be principles involved that are discoverable and engineerable, as well as reproducible. If my research is any indication, we have been secretly employing these ideas and technologies at least since the early 1940s.

Einstein completed a version of his unified field theory, which united electromagnetism and gravity, in 1928, and he presented it in Prague. What he did to unite electromagnetism and gravity was one simple little thing: he took an idea of a fifth-dimensional geometric space by Theodor Kaluza.

Kaluza had told Einstein that if you take length, width, and depth, and add in the fourth geometry of space and add in time, you actually get a unification of electromagnetism and gravity.

What Swedish physicist Oskar Klein computed was that this fifth-dimensional space was so tiny that it was at Planck's length ( $10^{-31}$ ). This fifth dimension was computed to be so small that it existed on the point of Planck's constant outside the dimensions of space-time. It folded around every point in space-time. It is believed that is where electromagnetism is, outside space-time, and that it comes in as an activated potential.

The only glitch in Einstein's theory was that he could not get the strong and weak nuclear force to fit the model, so he eventually withdrew it from public view. It was this incomplete yet engineerable unified field theory that may have become the scientific underpinning for the Philadelphia Experiment.

Tom Bearden thinks that what we call "gravity" has its origin in the vacuum, where it is a strong force. When you flip the forces of electromagnetism, you get gravity and its opposite: antigravity! When you tap into the electromagnetic flux within the vacuum, you have the potential to create enormous electrogravitational waves. These waves, which Tesla also discovered, could be used to artificially engineer and create a workable source of antigravity to power UFOs: man-made, intelligently controlled, highly advanced flying conveyances. You also get the ability to engineer specific electromagnetic waves that can be sent instantly through the vacuum to great distances, targeting a distant location.

We have never been able to figure out what gravity is. We can't find it. We theorize about it, but we can't unite it with electromagnetism. What if there is only the one energy and everything else is just a subset of that one force?

Basically, gravity does not exist as a separate force. If it did exist, you'd think we would have found it by now. But we can't find it, and we can't get it in any of our mathematical formulas. The only thing we can get is a curve in space-time with a very large body.

Conventional physicists say you cannot curve local space-time. Perhaps we cannot do it because we are using the wrong mathematical models. Maxwell figured this out—and then his model was imprecisely replicated by Heaviside and it got lost.

When you embrace any model based on limitation, your perceptual bias becomes “it cannot be done.” That does not mean it cannot be done. It just means it is not likely based upon what you have as an equation for your reality.

## **DIMENSIONS OF REALITY**

Review the qualities I have listed in the chapter concerning torsion fields and their properties if you doubt this. Here is what I think: electromagnetism is actually an effect, and, in fact, there are no forces. There are merely potentialities that come from the zero-point field. Therefore, electromagnetism and gravity are one and the same thing, which is why you can't find it. But gravity resides within the zero-point field.

Electromagnetism is the force that we see here. You can unite gravity and electromagnetism through that fifth-dimensional space, which wraps around every point in fourth-dimensional reality. Electromagnetism actually comes from outside of our fourth-dimensional reality, and it is an effect that we see.

If everything you see in your personal world is “effect” and you can get down to

“cause”—which is the unified field of the heart—then you are one with all those forces. You unify with those forces. What happens if you unify with those forces?

Well, first consider that you are dealing with polarities in space-time. What if you flip gravity in the unified field? What do you get? You have antigravity. I think the saints could do these things and that they were accessing these extradimensional states through the force of love. Through love they accessed the extradimensional state that is held within the tube torus in the field of the heart.

Jesus walked on water, demonstrating mastery over gravity. From the point of the torus field of the heart, gravity, or antigravity, becomes just a matter of flipping the charge. Thought is what causes the unification of these forces. Therefore, whatever you think and create a polarity for is what you manifest. The key is to get your thoughts and feelings subjugated to the power of the field of your heart. The magnetic field of your heart is actually stronger than the electrical field generated by your brain. The field of your heart is a true torsion field. From the point of the heart, when you truly make your abode there, you can potentially master all of time and space.

***This technology of consciousness resides right within the torsion field of our***

***heart linked to our bioplasmic energy fields.*** I believe it is the physics Jesus utilized. It is the physics of Nikola Tesla as well. So that is what we are beginning to teach. The cool thing about this is that not too many people are teaching this. So what do we have? We have an unpolluted morphic field that we can build however we choose.

I am not saying we should all try to levitate. It may have been a good idea when I fell off the stage. It would have been a pretty useful miracle. Workability is the key.

But if we are willing to entertain these ideas, then what happens is we create a dynamic in the morphic field (called Matrix Energetics). If we do this, miracles are more likely to show up because we know there is a science and logic and there are procedures and it has all been done before. If it has been done before, it can be done again. It does not matter if it should be done or if you need to do it. It is a principle that exists that is definable, observable, and reproducible.

I am confident that certain esoteric spiritual principles and practices are applicable to the phenomena of levitation and invisibility and the performing of miracles. If the black-ops physics allows for incredible secret technologies, I believe that the physics behind these spiritual and material manifestations are one and the same. I submit to you the idea that if one person can float in the air, all people can float in the air. I am not saying that

we are going to be having seminar participants floating around in the air anytime soon—just that it's possible.

Have you seen the Buddhist meditation posture where you close the loop of your conscious attention? This process is represented and perhaps engineered by the union of your thumb, index, and middle fingers joined together. What if this *mudra* does more than just direct your focus inward? What if it literally directs external EM

energy inward? Now what is all that external energy? Well, it is not gravity—which is a very weak force of a magnitude of  $10^{-42}$ .

However, what is the mirror of gravity? That would be electromagnetism, which is  $10^{42}$ , coincidentally enough. Do you see a yin/yang sort of thing occurring here?

Now, if you invert those equations, then you get gravity at  $10^{42}$  in the vacuum and  $10^{-42}$  here. If you do that, what do you do? You would float up, or levitate, into the air.

In Hindu esoteric anatomy there are two channels or forces called the *Ida* and the *Pingala* in our nervous systems, which run up both sides of our spines. What if those energies are your forward wave and your time-reversed wave? When you focus on these energy channels and you combine them in the central spinal channel, or *shushuma*, perhaps you get a scalar electromagnetic wave.

In other words, you get two waves at 90 degrees out of phase with each other that yield a sum-vector of zero. In other words: they are not detectable by our current technology but contain the force of the vacuum. That would be why raising Kundalini can generate powerful effects, including levitation or walking on water, healing the sick, and perhaps even the ability to raise the dead!

How is all this weird science useful for you? Anything that can be used as a weapon can also be used to heal. Time-reversed energy has positive effects such as healing, stopping decay, increased longevity and vitality, the ability to levitate—and, oh yeah, miracles! So then what are you doing? You are

tapping the virtual energy of the vacuum. If you can harness this energy from the vacuum, you have produced a source of free energy. You can engineer the vacuum's energies, structuring the virtual photons present into an artificially engineered template of action. You can simply flip the polarity or phase of a disease pattern, and a healing miracle can be the result!

Yogananda said in *Autobiography of a Yogi* that the advanced yogi could access enough light energy to run the city of Chicago. This energy is in the zero point. You can't get to the zero-point field unless you go through the higher computational capacity of the right brain. And the right brain has direct access through the field of the heart.

*These spiritual and energetic technologies have been around for maybe two hundred thousand years, and they possess a really big morphic field that almost no one is tapping into. When you deliberately tie into the morphic field of this kind of ancient power for the purpose of healing the sick and helping the planet, you are using this spiritual technology of consciousness in a way that supports the best qualities in mankind. You are becoming a true Light Worker and world server.*

## **DR. HECTOR GARCIA'S LEVITATION STORY**

*When I was growing up, my mom met my stepfather. He was a professor at Cal State Los Angeles and an American gentleman. One afternoon, he took me to Pasadena to the Self-Realization Center. I thought this was pretty cool. I asked him what the center was about. He said it was about prayer and meditation and devotion. He said to relax and feel good. He went into a room with some adults and told me to go sit in the garden. I thought, "OK, that is cool. I can do that."*

*I had always been interested in yoga and meditation. I had read several books and remember that the first one I read was on Hatha Yoga. I would see the yogi sitting there in lotus position, and I remember thinking that I wanted to do that. No one told me that I could not. So I picked up the book and then started doing it.*

*So when my stepdad and I went to the center, I was just doing my “thing” out in the garden. I recall vividly that it was a sunny Sunday afternoon, and I was just sitting in my lotus position, meditating. When I opened my eyes, there were people all around me, looking at me. Naturally I felt a bit funny and wondered, “What are they looking at? What is so strange about what I am doing? I thought you are supposed to sit in lotus position, raised off the ground a little bit.”*

*Someone asked me, “Who taught you this?” Innocently I replied that I thought you were supposed to do this, and that I had read it in a book. I was told no, and then I fell down.*

*Years later when I was in high school, I ran cross-country. The night before a race, I would go into a trance and picture the race the next day. I would picture a Kriya Yoga star with Christ in the middle. I would meditate with my back to the wall for about twenty minutes. Invariably, my sister would intervene and tell me I was strange because although I would start with my back against the wall, at some point my back would be turned and I would be in lotus position, facing the other way. I was off the ground and turned around.*

*I still remember being able to levitate, but I cannot do it now.*

This experience Garcia shares breaks your paradigm. If average people can levitate, I suspect that momentum is the reason. It is just about dropping into the state and doing what has already been done before. If you are supposed to be able to read a book and do it, then that is why we are writing that second book. There will be people who read *this* book and they will do what we talk about. Then those people will link up to a grid or morpnic field where more and more people will be able to do it, and pretty soon the world can shift.

Have you heard stories about Tibetan monks being able to levitate and do what in general seems to subvert the known laws of our current physics model? If they are indeed doing these things, then our physics model is incomplete at best, and possibly even deliberately deceptive or wrong! I am not saying that these siddhis should be a goal of Matrix Energetics, and I don't need to go to extreme examples in order to understand the principle.

Do you understand this? It is practical to do this. Unless you really break your habitual patterns of thinking, your coefficient bonds with normal consciousness, then what happens is that you do not exceed the orbit of your limited awareness.

Review the qualities I have listed in this chapter concerning torsion fields and their properties if you doubt this. Here is what I think: Electromagnetism is actually an effect, and in fact there are no forces. There are merely potentialities that come from the zero-point field. You are now starting to understand how the power to do many of these things resides within the unified field, the torsion field of our heart.

Miracles have occurred before and can occur again. It does not matter if one should occur or if you need to “do” a miracle. Again, it is a principle that is definable, observable, and reproducible. Do you get this? Remember that you can step into the dynamic field of consciousness that Matrix Energetics has built because we have said, “What if there were no rules?”

One of my students told me about some friends who were visiting India. The friends became so joyful at one point that they began to float off the ground. This was not a trick. It was real: Again, it is a principle. I saw the picture of this. My point is very simply that you do not need to be able to levitate or walk on water or even perform miracles. Miracles will happen when you stop trying to make something happen. You are the miracle.

**18**

## **ARCHETYPES: MAKING A LOVE**

### **CONNECTION WITH THE STUFF IN YOUR**

#### **HEAD**

As you begin to work with some of these inner processes, pay close attention to the types of energies and characters that bubble up from your subconscious. Keep track of the unique symbolism that your mind employs to communicate with your conscious awareness. By doing this you will begin to strengthen the connection with your greater self-awareness.

Consider keeping a written diary of the images that you encounter repeatedly and try to figure out what is being represented by them. A lot of guys won't ask for directions if they get lost; don't be like that with your own mental processes. If you get lost or do not know what something means, just ask! That is so simple that at first you might not think that it will work. Trust and ask something simple such as

“What does this mean?”

## **ARCHETYPES AND THEIR USEFULNESS AS A HEALING TOOL**

My friend Dr. Hector Garcia uses his intuitive gifts to detect energetic imbalances in the body—from the cellular to the quantum level—with amazing accuracy. He talks about archetypes and their usefulness as a healing tool:

*When I teach about archetypal patterns, I like to do them with physical structures.*

*For instance, if I am working with a client with scoliosis (an abnormal or exaggerated curvature of the spine), I sometimes visualize or see a ruler lined up against their spine. Often instantly, the act of superimposing an image of this nature will convey to the energy field the desired correction, and the scoliosis will just be gone. Sometimes you have to be careful when working with people with things like scoliosis because they can occasionally become upset when their condition changes so radically and quickly. You see, they are not used to being “straight” and the sudden change can occasionally be disorienting and upsetting to them.*

*I had one client who came to me, and her brother was a chiropractor who had been treating her for her scoliosis. She was told that I could help her. I did the corrections that showed up in her case, and afterward her spine was no longer twisted. She came back a week later, mad at me because her clothes no longer fit.*

*Go figure!*

## **SUPERHEROES AS MYTHOLOGICAL ARCHETYPES: GREEN**

## **LANTERN AND THE AWESOME POWER OF INTENT**

One useful thing that I have always done, being a recovering geek and comic book fan, is populate my subconscious terrain with noble figures such as Superman, Batman, and Spiderman.

Green Lantern is the coolest superhero ever because the greatest force in the known universe powers his ring: *the power of intent!* This pure intent, when shaped by a particular thought, takes on the form and activity of the ring bearer's directed focus. Whatever you think of in enough detail will manifest and can be wielded by Green Lantern or even yourself! Green Lantern supports and protects the forces of good and should not be confused with that other ring bearer, Sauron from J. R. R.

Tolkien's epic, *The Lord of the Rings*. The only thing Green Lantern's ring won't work against is the color yellow. I have always taken this to represent how our own fears or cowardice can stop our intent from manifesting. As the Ascended Master Saint Germain has stated on such subjects, "Fear is the enemy of the Alchemical experiment!"<sup>1</sup>

At one point recently in the last year, I decided to mentally make and wear a copy of Green Lantern's power ring. Now, to many of you, this may seem silly, but instead of playing with tanks and guns when I was little, I played with superheroes.

My mom even made me a complete Batman costume.

At a recent seminar, someone gave me a sizable sum of money so I could buy a very cool Batman outfit from eBay that was made to exacting detail. I was only partly joking when I told seminar participants that I had a unique weight loss plan. I was going to buy a Batman suit, complete with rippling torso and leg muscles, and hang it in my closet. I now own an exact copy of the Michael Keaton *Batman* movie costume and recently wore it onstage at one of my seminars.

## **SUPER(MAN) POSITION IN REALITY**

There is a cost to emulating your heroes too closely. When I was a little boy, I was really fascinated with George Reeves's portrayal of Superman. (Of course, at my young age I just thought that he really was Superman!) I was so taken with Superman that I drew a red "S" on my T-shirt and my mother sewed a red cape for me. I think she was a little worried that I was going to try to jump off the roof of our garage, trying to fly. At one point my mother presented me with some horn-rimmed eyeglass frames. She quite logically pointed out to me that if you are going to be Superman, then you have to be Clark Kent as well.

It was a good argument, and so I started wearing the glasses when I wasn't running about in the identity of the big "S." There was only one little problem with this good-natured and entirely reasonable suggestion. My dad wore glasses, and I looked somewhat like a younger carbon copy of him. I think I might have inadvertently given my subconscious the wrong commands because within a matter of weeks my vision deteriorated and I actually needed glasses to see clearly. So be careful what you agree to and how it can limit your perceptions and abilities in life. I still wear glasses or contacts when I am teaching onstage, but you could say that *I see things differently these days*.

In truth, I know a number of people who can see things beyond the spectrum of normal conscious awareness on a daily basis, and they do just fine with that reality.

As long as you don't think that because you can see something you are always responsible for doing something about it, you can function in that manner. Just because the world is tragically teeming with sick people doesn't mean you can heal all of them. You take each day as it comes and live in the Grace of the moment. My friend Mark sometimes sees diseases and conditions in people. Simply because he sees such things doesn't necessarily suggest that he can do something about what he sees—at least not in every case.

I will never forget how one day in the office, near the lunch hour, Mark was going out the door and I was about to start an appointment with a new client. As Mark exited the building, he handed me a folded note. I unfolded the paper. On it Mark had written the words "Be sure to question her about

the family cancer pattern.” Sure enough, when I asked the client about this very issue, she provided me with an in-depth picture of how cancer was indeed a factor in her family genetics.

This is not information she had listed on an intake form. Mark had “seen” this by noticing energy patterns in her auric field. But he misses things sometimes, which is why we *always double-check everything we can through conventional medical diagnostics*, which, as doctors, we have the ability to employ where warranted.

Trust, but use every method at your disposal to verify.

One more word on this subject will drive home the point. One of my patients, who became a friend as well, told me how he had studied with a famous psychic surgeon in the Philippines. Now some of those individuals may not be for real, but my friend Arnold swears that he witnessed this “surgeon” open up a guy’s chest and lay his heart right on top of it, out in the open. Time appeared to stop, and the psychic healer stated that he was cleaning out the coronary arteries and had to stop the local flow of time and the man’s heart in order to accomplish this feat.

Arnold was a very down-to-earth philanthropist who was a self-made millionaire.

I tended to believe the earnestness of his account, however mind-bending the details.

Arnold further confided with me that this same healer said he was going to open Arnold’s “Third Eye,” or “Mystical Eye.”

Arnold swore that after this procedure he could not go into a fast-food restaurant without “seeing” the various internal diseases the patrons were nourishing with the devitalized fare the eatery was serving. He told me that it took a long time, through disciplined meditation, to shut down or veil that ability so he could function in this realm. It has been said that without vision the people perish, and for thirty years this statement has driven my desire to be clairvoyant.<sup>2</sup> However, I am not sure that I want to see

everything all the time, so I am still in negotiation with my subconscious mind concerning this issue.

## **SEEING IS BECOMING**

At one point in his training with me, Mark entered into a very deep trance state and his “Third Eye” popped open. In a flash, he was suddenly seeing spirits in some other realm talking to him and walking toward him. I asked him if he wanted to turn off that experience, since it was a somewhat frightening turn of events. He wisely replied from his deep trance, “No, thank you. Leave it on, but perhaps you could install some kind of dimmer switch.”

Brilliant and brave, I thought to myself as I complied with his request by supplying the appropriate suggestions. This was another turning point in his training—and he can still see spirits. The last time Mark taught with me was in San Francisco. I remember him commenting on the number of ghosts he saw walking the streets. After all, San Francisco is famous as the home of the Grateful Dead!

I don’t want you to think, even for a moment, that in order to be able to do things with Matrix Energetics you need to be clairvoyant or psychic in any way. This is not the case at all. It is okay to open your awareness to new abilities and experiences.

Some of the things I have been talking about in the last few pages may begin to happen in your world even as you are reading this book. A natural unfolding of abilities will occur as you begin to play in the morphic field of possibility that Matrix Energetics represents.

I have heard many stories from my students and people who have read my first book without attending a live seminar. It seems that by picking up this book and reading it, you are in some instances signifying to your subconscious mind that you are ready to experience some of the things I have written about. If such things do not happen to you and you wish that they would, go easy on yourself and don’t be in a hurry. Trust in the process of learning that seems natural to your pace and allow yourself to open

slowly, like a beautiful flower opening its petals to greet the new morning sunshine.

When I “play” with someone, I say “this” and “that” as well. I do not even know what “that” is. Well, I kind of know, but here is the thing: if you slow it down in order to figure out what it is, then you are taking too long. If you take too long, nothing will happen because you are observing whether it is happening or not. You can become educated in not knowing. You can work with primary, heart-centered knowing coupled with secondary, right-brain, nonspatial awareness.

Jesus said, “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you.”<sup>3</sup> These and other such words from Jesus are equations in higher consciousness: that is, the Quantum Jesus again. The act of asking open-ended questions opens the doors of perception to the *All That Is*. From this point of trust you can make an assessment, not a judgment.

As soon as you judge, you collapse the wave function, and the wave function represents all possibility outside the domain of time and space.

**19**

## **PRACTICING THE ART OF INNOCENT**

### **PERCEPTION**

Welcome and embrace what shows up and you will learn to see. When you look through the eyes of your opening heart, you get a feeling for what shows up. This feeling state creates the arc of contact between your heart and your desired outcome.

This is part of the science of manifestation. It is a feeling state. As you begin to engage in the childlike art of spontaneous perception, be willing to suspend your rules and go with the flow.

If you do this, your brain can begin to create unique neurochemical states that can deeply alter your conscious experiences. By habitually practicing

the feeling of this altered state, you can learn to create new possibilities in your life. This state of being is not unlike the process of undertaking a shamanic journey. Trust that whatever you experience is unique to you and a gift from your unconscious or High Self.

Appreciate it, enjoy it, and learn from it.

*I believe in everything until it's disproved.*

*So I believe in fairies, the myths, dragons.*

*It all exists, even if it's in your mind.*

*Who's to say that dreams and nightmares*

*aren't as real as the here and now?*

**John Lennon**

## **THE CONTROL GROUP FOR ALTERED STATES**

A gentleman was participating in one of the Matrix Energetics seminar exercises, and a large control panel showed up in the air in front of him. He did not ask for it. It merely showed up. At the time, he did not know what it was for, so he merely acknowledged it and moved on. Now, he told me, he regularly sees and converses with spirits of what some people call “the spirits of the dead.” Perhaps he has had this ability all along. He came into life with the control panel set for medium and now he has moved into high gear. So trust what shows up. It may just change your life.

Tolkien's *The Hobbit* is subtitled *There and Back Again*. Some forms of schizophrenia and madness could be subtitled “there and did not make it back again.” In the former, you have Gandalf the Wizard to help ensure your safe arrival.

In the case of schizophrenia, you may not know you have help. Trusting in a higher power and then demanding proof can make a world of difference. God or the devil will never make you do anything against your free will.

But you can create a god or devil that can enslave you to a set of choices not conducive to freedom or personal transformation. Choose wisely!

## **OUR PERCEPTIONS CONFORM TO OUR UNCONSCIOUS RULES AND**

### **EXPECTATIONS**

Unconscious behavior is mapped by what we call *physical laws*. These laws, or rule sets, describe what is allowed and what is forbidden. What we conceive or perceive depends on our model for how reality should be in our personal worldview. Our unconscious rule-filters determine what shows up in our world and equally what is denied conscious access. For example, rarely will you hear of a Christian who has a vision of Buddha or a Buddhist who in meditation receives Jesus Christ as his or her personal savior.

Our reality recipe is flavored by the ingredients we allow and the individual tastes we prefer. This mixture is formed from equal parts of what we know, what we knew, and what society expects us to believe. One possible definition of conform is to

“co-form” or “cocreate.” Collectively, at an unconscious level, we create and sustain the cultural hologram of our sensory-based experiences.

It is the unconscious box containing your assumptions, beliefs, and experiences that is the driving creative force behind each and every one of your manifestations.

If you are reading this book and some of things I say seem to go right over your head, or perhaps beneath your feet, then that is okay. When you don't immediately understand a concept or idea, this can be a signal that *you are learning new information*. All our concepts are largely based upon duality and linearity: *the gospel of opposing forces*. Remember, though, the only time you want to go up against a posing force is when it potentially involves super-models!

Angels and gods and comic-book heroes qualify as excellent super-models. If you model stellar qualities in the collective and unconscious archetypes of power and possibility, you can, to varying degrees, learn to harness the naked energy of those forces. Frankly, the raw psychic energy stored within these cultural archetypes can be used in magical ways. If you don't believe me, read the first chapter of my first book and then come back to this one. Jesus, Superman, and Spiderman are all wonderful archetypes you can tap into, but the boogeyman isn't.

If you give up the sense of struggle, there is no need to enter into battle with yourself or some part of the collective psyche. Energy not expended in internal warring can be used to make more love, sex, and money—the three psychic food groups! Give up that struggle with your ego. Change the templates and patterns that are predicated on the old ways of being. You can move into new awareness patterns that provide for expanded opportunities in every aspect of your life. Expanded and altered awareness is the key that opens the floodgates of opportunity.

Here is an example of the use of archetypes from a Matrix Energetics student and

“whizard”:

*The MD I'd helped with tennis elbow and, more recently, sinus/allergies just shakes his head and says, “Bob, that's just not right” when his problem goes away. Still not entirely convinced, he stopped by the other day, saying, “Bob, I've been getting these cluster headaches. I don't have them now, but can you prevent them?” I told him we could surely try, and I did a triangle archetype with one hand on his shoulder and the triangle about twelve inches from his head. I asked, “What would it be like NOT to have any headaches ever again?”*

*He just shook his head again and said, “Bob, initially I thought this was BS, but I felt something that time . . . there IS something to this!”*

*“Yup,” I said, “Been trying to tell you!”*

— **BB**

## HUMAN INTENTION AND DIVINE

### INTERVENTION

For a number of years, I was involved with a mystical sect and was taught how the power of the *Spoken Word* can be used to create change.<sup>1</sup> If you have ever wished you could take something back right after you said it, you have a real-life example of how words can facilitate change. *Words are cups of light that contain holographic patterns and pictures.* When these auditory and conceptual templates are unlocked and set in motion, they can precipitate the things that you direct your focused intent upon.

I have noticed that the bigger and more powerful the belief system or construct, the more likely a noticeable outcome can occur in the so-called real world. One of the key concepts in the mystical sect that I belonged to is that Angels and Masters are indeed very much real and that Divine Intervention can be expected. *Expect miracles and plug into the grid space in the Matrix where miracles are the rule, not the exception.*

If you are on a bridge with your life hanging in the balance as I was, the Angel Grid is preferred to the Eeyore Grid! In other words, in times of need don't be a jackass when your life depends on your ability to reach out to something greater than yourself!

### THE LABORS OF HERCULES

So you may better understand what I am saying, let me share a few examples from an earlier time in my life. In my spiritual community, one of the Masters whose intercession we invoked was the Greek god Hercules. Now, as a side note, I have always found it extremely interesting that Steve Reeves played Hercules in the movies. The original 1950s television series *Superman* starred George Reeves, and in the *Superman* movies the hero was, of course, played by the unforgettable Christopher Reeve!

It makes me wonder if the Reeves name is in some form of harmonic resonance with the Superman/Hercules hologram. I wondered if the remake

of *Superman* was destined to star Keanu Reeves. But that was not to be; instead, *that* Reeves became forever identified with the concept of the Matrix itself.

What follows are two interactions that members of my spiritual community had with the morphic field of Hercules. In the first example, several community members were stranded on the road with a flat tire. Drawing upon their spiritual training, they decided to invoke the energy of Hercules to put fresh air into the tire, even though they probably had a spare in the trunk. Surprisingly to them, but not to my readers, they chanted an intense oral repetitive mantra (“thou shalt decree a thing, and it shall be established unto thee”<sup>2</sup>) with absolutely no discernable results.

The tire remained flat!

In another strikingly similar instance on another day and a different highway, a small group of this community also found themselves stranded along the road with a flat tire. Just as in the previous story, they invoked to the spirit of Hercules for help, but this time with their *flat tire reality simulation*. In other words, although they were praying to the “gods,” they were acting as if a different outcome depended on them. Within moments a bright blue Volkswagen bug screeched to a halt by the side of the road. The spiritual seekers gasped with surprise when an enormous black man got out of the vehicle, towering above them.

Without a word, the man walked to the rear of the disabled vehicle and, taking the bumper firmly in enormous hands, lifted the car several feet off the ground. One of the men in the group, immediately grasping the significance of the gentle giant’s act, quickly changed the tire. With the deed done, the benevolent behemoth gently placed the car on the ground, nodded to the group, got back in his tiny vehicle, and without a backward glance sped away!

In the first example, the individuals in the story *tried to use spiritual science to trump real-world physics* without a noticeable outcome. They tried to do something that would have been easier and more practical to just do for themselves. In the second example, *there were no preconditions*

*placed upon how help might show up—just an overriding trust that it would.*

To sum up the lesson here in another way, the indomitable Saint Germain once said to a group of devotees, “Pray as if everything depends on us, and act as if everything depends on you.” Good advice by which to live your life!

Two more examples from my personal interactions with these energies should bring this point home. Many years ago, my first wife and I along with our three young children drove across the country in our old orange Suburban to attend a spiritual conference. Rain had been falling steadily in California for several days, and the roads where the conference was being held were very wet and muddy. As often occurs, nature can provide interesting tests of faith and endurance.

My Suburban became hopelessly mired in thick mud, the back wheels submerged almost two-thirds of the way up. I tried several times to get out, uselessly spinning my wheels, with increasing frustration. Resolved that nothing on earth I could do was going to make the slightest difference, I said a quick prayer to Hercules, reasoning that his legendary strength was much needed here. They say the punishment should fit the crime; I say that the prayer should fit the situation when the powers of the heaven matrix are invoked.

Then I calmly walked around the back of my truck and put my back against the rear bumper, my palms lifting up on its chrome edge. After another heartfelt entreaty to Hercules, I lifted up the car, freeing it completely from the mud. Pleasantly surprised, I was able to easily push it up the rest of the way on a thirty-degree hill. I paused to look back at how far I’d gone, only after the Suburban’s rear wheels were safely again on dry road. Again, things like this are possible but only likely if you fully occupy the belief state terrain in the Matrix where heavenly help is a reasonably expected outcome.

**ANGELS MOVE A MOUNTAIN OF DIVERSITY**

One final story, lest you think things like what I am talking about only happen once in a lifetime, if ever. Several years after this event, I was on staff as a doctor serving people in my chosen spiritual community. My spiritual teacher lived at the top of a winding mountain road with a very steep upward incline. One winter night I received a call from her to please come up and treat her. This was in the middle of a brutal

Montana

cold

snap

complete

with

blizzard

conditions.

The

always-treacherous drive to her mountain retreat was all but impassable on this night. The road was covered with a thick, glasslike sheet of slippery ice.

As I was carefully making my way around one of the hairpin curves in my incomparable orange Suburban, I came upon a semitruck jackknifed across the road.

Getting out of my vehicle, I was pleasantly surprised to see one of the community's regular truck drivers, David. He told me that he had supplies in the cargo hold of his truck that needed to be delivered to the top of the mountain that evening.

Resolved to do whatever I could to assist, I carefully inched my car around the stranded truck. Positioning my rear bumper in proximity to the front of

the massive semi, David and I wrapped a thick chain around the bumpers of both vehicles.

Getting in my car, I engaged the Suburban into drive, placing my foot gently on the accelerator—and promptly went nowhere!

Remembering that sometimes we entertain Angels unawares, I realized the corollary to this statement. Whereas Angels are liable to be entertained when we stubbornly try to do things without their help, it makes a lot more sense to *ask for their assistance*. Performing this action makes it far more likely in spiritual law that you will become aware of their presence and they can then help. When the student is ready, the Masters may still wait a bit in order to enjoy a good laugh, but then they will invariably appear!

Mindful of this bit of wisdom, as I called out in my mind and stretched out my feelings, I felt a connection with a benign otherworldly presence. Feeling better about the odds, I again gently placed my foot on the accelerator, easing forward. A vision of a team of bright blue Angels lifting the chain and heaving in unison flashed unbidden to my mind's eye. The chain reached the end of its tether and caught for a moment as my rear wheels dug into the icy surface of the road, seeking a firm purchase.

In the next moment, it was as if the semi and my Suburban were weightless: *the ponderous laws of physics replaced by angelic rule*. Both vehicles shot quickly and safely up the mountain pass as if launched from a giant slingshot. When I told this story to my teacher upon safely arriving at her door, she laughed heartily and proclaimed, “You are really one of the team now, aren't you?”

## **GETTING IN SYNC WITH A REALITY GREATER THAN YOU**

To me, being one of the team means that you are in sync with the reality you find yourself in. If you want to be rich, then you study the mind-set of people who have the beliefs, habits, and actions that have been proven to generate those kinds of outcomes. You don't sit on the street corner bemoaning your current lot in life—a fat lot of good that will do. The universe doesn't listen to the whining and complaining of your inner brat. If

your significant other wants you to take out the garbage, it is easier to get you to do it if he or she asks in a pleasant tone of voice.

Strangely enough, *if the voices in your head are of the pleasant variety, it tends to be easier to manifest useful and pleasant outcomes.*

## **BARGAINING WITH THE DIVINE**

Do we meditate or pray or try to improve ourselves just so we can get more of what we want? Everyone cannot win the lottery. As much as I am sure God loves each and every one of us, that would entail “A Whole Lotta Love,” and at the very least there would be lawsuits over copyright infringements. We cannot avoid pain, suffering, or death by attempting to bargain with our version of God. Or can we?

Right outside Butte, Montana, there is an enormous concrete statue of the Blessed Virgin. This monument is so imposing that there are flashing beacons hung on it so that low-flying planes will not crash into it. The story of its construction is interesting. The wife of a very rich man was dying of cancer. In desperation, the man prayed in proper Catholic fashion for God to save her from her fate.

Poof and presto, in his time of trouble Mother Mary appeared, whispering, “If you build it, then she will heal” (sung to the tune of “Let It Be”). The man accepted this vision and built the statue—and his wife recovered. The statue is a monument to the power of what can occur when you enter into a powerful morphic reality and play fully by the rules of the game.

**21**

## **TAKE THE GUIDED TOUR—YOU’LL BE GLAD**

### **YOU DID**

At each level of the “reality game,” we draw to ourselves the individuals and experiences we need. At each level of mastery we are currently working on, we get assigned helper energies. Those individuals or benign patterns of energy have graduated from our particular level and are

available to help us with the “cheat code for our virtual reality game.” These individual spirit entities or *personalized holographic helper projections* could be, for us, what we personally experience as Angels or “spirit guides.” And they might look like Archangel Gabriel, your grandmother, Louis Pasteur, or perhaps even an Ewok!

I am not suggesting that whatever you believe about religious or spiritual subjects is untrue or somehow incomplete. This is just another way to look at these concepts.

It is my hope that some of what I say may be helpful to many of you reading these words. When you can grasp the basic elements of these ideas, *you can begin to cocreate new and magical worlds of possibility*. Whatever you have believed up to this point, if it serves you, I would hold fast to it.

However, if you have been drifting away from traditional religious and scientific interpretations, then perhaps some of these ideas may be of service to you. I believe that Angels and Masters, saints, and other entities exist apart from me and without any input from my energy. And yet I also have come to suspect that how I experience these things is colored and seasoned by my cultural as well as personal concepts and biases.

If you have not had angelic intervention or a connection with spirit guides in your life up to this point, perhaps you might consider borrowing a page from the Vajrayana yogins, and *set out to create a connection*. At first you might experience this as being only in your mind; however, if you channel enough *zero-point energy* into the specialized morphic field of your intent, you can create an actual relationship with so-called non-physical beings. What you make up and hold as an image and then release to your subconscious can indeed take on a life of its own. It’s a little like the Pinocchio story, where the loving ministrations of the lonely puppet master bring his creation to life.

I have great reverence and respect for my Angels and “spirit guides.” When your life has been saved not once but many times by otherworldly voices, you *develop an inherent trust in such things*. If you have read my first book, *Matrix Energetics*, you are familiar with the story about how I was hit by a

car at ten years old. I was suddenly knocked into the air, mostly unconscious.

As I was descending toward the hot, hard pavement, a voice sounded loud in my ear, commanding me to “slap the mat!” Responding instantly and instinctively, I performed a perfect judo move that broke my fall and saved my life. I did not as a young boy know anything about the martial arts. How did that disembodied voice know what to say that would cause me to react in a split second? And how did I know what it meant? Now do you see why I make such a big deal about trusting inner guidance?

Many years later, I was driving someone home who lived on top of a steep mountain pass. It was deep into the winter months, and my Suburban was plowing slowly uphill through a driving Montana blizzard. Suddenly the same voice that saved my life when I was ten spoke urgently to me, saying, “Get out of the car and put your ear to the ground!” Arguing with the voice, I said, “It’s really cold out there! Not doing it!” Moments later the same voice repeated the previous message, but this time the urgency of the request had morphed into a command—one I dared not disobey. I got out of the car and put my ear to the frozen ground.

Immediately, I heard the sound of air hissing from a puncture in my left rear tire.

That commanding presence that I could not see or identify had potentially saved my life again! How many times does something like this have to happen to you before you learn to trust it? Once was enough for me. *Expect miracles* and you will have them.

## **CHOOSE CAREFULLY WHEN AND HOW YOU LISTEN TO GUIDANCE**

I have had really good experiences by listening to a certain inner voice I define as belonging to my guardian guide and friend. Does this mean that I think you should listen to any old voice that shows up in your head? Of course that is a silly and potentially dangerous idea. Ever stood looking out from a high perch only to hear a voice telling you to jump? I have, and I am

sure many of you have as well. Is this a voice you should listen to? Most certainly not ever! So how do you tell the difference?

If you hear a voice that makes you feel loved and protected, that may be a voice to heed. Notice I did not say flatter. Flattering voices are just like the ones that tell you to jump from a high place or do other stupid or potentially hurtful things to yourself or another. If you hear voices like that, you should run, not walk, to a professional who can offer you good psychological help. Any voice that flatters you or condemns you—sometimes in the very same sentence—is not there to help or guide you. Any voice that tells you that if you don't stop doing something you will go blind or to hell or whichever comes first should be put on your list of suspect voices as well.

I suspect some members of the psychological community might read my words and politely categorize me and label me crazy; and they are, of course, welcome to think so. In fact, from the perceptual box that they have constructed, there is no other possible interpretation, and that is just perfect for them. I wouldn't want to be without my guardians and guides. I also wouldn't obey a voice that told me to cast myself down from a high place so that Angels might bear me up. I am not going to be listening to that line of illogic, and you shouldn't either!

## **IF YOU CAN'T TRUST YOUR HIGHER GUIDANCE, “HIRE” ANOTHER**

### **ONE**

Dr. Mark Dunn had guides that he mentally created and then authorized to act on his behalf. A little problem he ran into is that sometimes what his guides said was either inaccurate or just plain wrong. What do you do when an employee doesn't perform according to the specifications and requirements of his job? That's right: *you fire him*. Next, you consciously revise your needs and expectations so that the next person you hire is closer to the mark and a better match for your needs. If the voice of your “higher self” is consistently wrong or just plain ornery, fire it and hire another self.

If you asked Mark or other students of mine, they might tell you they have fired numerous guides that were not measuring up. *Fire their sorry ass and*

*start over!*

Keep revising your needs and expectations. You might want to make a list of what qualities you need and expect from a “spirit helper.” If you are just making all this up, then you can do anything you want. And if spirit guides are real, then it makes even more sense to hold auditions for just the right one.

## **BUILDING RAPPORT WITH INNER GUIDANCE EXERCISE**

One really easy way to do this is to practice asking simple questions to which the answers can readily be ascertained. I am sure most of us have had the experience of getting stuck in rush-hour traffic on the way home from work. I know that you’ve sometimes scolded yourself for not listening to the prompting of your inner voice, the one that told you to take an alternate route home that particular day. Why not begin prompting that guide to be a more active part of your life on a regular basis?

When you get in the car to go somewhere, ask your guide, “Which way should I go home?” Present clear choices, one at a time, and then pause and listen or feel for an affirmative response. If you’re not sure, ask again and be patient.

Always act on the advice that is given, even if it occasionally turns out to be incorrect. You are building the strands of a strong intuitive bond, and like the Wicked Witch says in the *Wizard of Oz*, “*These things must be done delicately!*” If it helps to go out and buy some ruby slippers, or perhaps some green tennis shoes like the ones George Harrison wore on the rooftop scenes in the movie *Let It Be*, then by all means do that! Just remember one thing: this is not so much about props as about being in the *proper state* to receive the desired information.

You already know what to do if the information turns out to be consistently wrong, don’t you? That’s right: “You are fired!” Bring on the next applicant for the position of guide. If you fire enough of the voices in your head, the cream will eventually rise to the top. Of course, you can always have a grievance meeting with your guide if you are not quite ready to fire it outright. Try writing down all the things you want and expect from a guide

so that when you have a meeting of the minds, you are clear and on purpose. One other rule of thumb I suggest: if the information you receive is cryptic or couched in symbols, be more inclined to trust it. The guides often communicate through the symbolic language of the right brain.

## **HEARING THE VOICE OF OPPORTUNITY**

There was a young man in my seminar in Vancouver, B.C., last year whom I pulled out of the audience at random and brought onstage. When I got him up there, he told the audience and me the most amazing thing. He said that he works as a computer programmer in London, and one day he was sitting at his station when he heard an unfamiliar and powerful voice tell him he must learn Matrix Energetics.

Intrigued, he performed a search on the Internet and quickly came to the Matrix Energetics website. He stayed on the site for several hours, looking at the video clips and reading everything he could. Yet it made no sense to him. He was a software expert, and all this stuff seemed to be about healing and transformation. “Yeah, right,” he thought, “whatever *that* means.” Still, something there *spoke to him*—perhaps literally.

Unable to get that voice out of his head and on sheer faith, he booked a flight to Vancouver. At this point in his story, I asked him if he had ever made one of those telephones out of two cans and a string when he was little. “Sure,” he replied. This was all the opening I required. Quickly, I had him hold an imaginary tin can to his ear while I threaded the string to the other can and walked out deep into the audience.

When I got far enough out, I spoke to him in a deep, powerful voice from my end of our makeshift communication device, saying, “This is the voice of God speaking.” He fell off his chair onto the stage floor in a very deep altered state and remained there for the better part of an hour. When he came back to an ordinary, consensus reality, he simply was not the same man. He loved the entire seminar so much that it was almost as though he were a fish that had been forced to breathe surface air all his life and was suddenly immersed into water by some beneficent force. It was like coming home for him.

## CRANK UP THE VOLUME

If you already hear the voice of your intuition speaking—and most of us do—how do you maximize that ability? It seems obvious to me that if you hear what the Bible has called *the still, small voice speaking within*, the easiest thing to do is turn the voice up! Have you ever been out cruising in your car with the radio turned down low just to keep you company? As you are driving along, the familiar faint strains of a tune break in on your meditative reverie. With a rush of happy recognition, you reach down and turn the volume knob up—way up.

## DEVELOPING YOUR INTUITION STEREO SYSTEM EXERCISE

I wonder if any of you have had a moment when you start thinking about some great old song you haven't heard in years. Acting on a whim, you reach down and turn the radio on, only to discover that you have joined the exact song you were hearing in your head, in progress. This is how you can boost your clairaudience. For some of you, you might need to *look down and to the left or the right* as you find the “On”

button for your intuition stereo, flip it on, and then turn it up. I'll wait right now while you do this for yourself. Do it now!

Some of you reading this may have gotten so busy in life that you have temporarily forgotten how to listen. If you are one of those people, this might take a few extra minutes of work, but it will be well worth it. I want you to read this paragraph and then put the book down, close your eyes, and slip down into a really relaxed state. When you are there, I want you to *look carefully at your intuition stereo system*. Do the simplest things first: look down and make sure it is plugged in!

Now find the “On” switch and turn it on. If it is working, *find the guide or the Angel station*. If you don't know what channel the Angels are on, refer to the program guide in your subconscious. It will help you find the easy-listening station.

Make sure that when you locate your preferred channel, you mark it as a favorite so it is very easy to tune in to. How do you know if it is the right

station? *You'll know.*

Not because you will always hear only what you want, but because even the unfamiliar music will make you *feel so good* when you listen to it that you won't want to change the channel.

## **TROUBLESHOOTING TIPS**

1. If you've done everything I just suggested and you are still not getting a clear signal, go back inside your mind and look at your speakers for your intuition stereo system. Are the speaker wires connected? Check carefully to make sure there are no breaks or frays in the wiring and that the other end of the wire is properly connected to the speaker terminals on the stereo.

2. If all the connections look good and you are plugged in, then perhaps you have a problem with reception in your area of expertise. For some of us, we take our jobs so seriously that we have forgotten how to play. If you think that you may be one of those people who has a reception problem, or a problem being receptive, follow steps 3 and 4 closely.

3. If reception is a problem for you sometimes, it helps to *lie down* and temporarily *forget about your troubles* for a short time. Perhaps the work channel competes with the signal from your intuition station. Don't work at this. Relax *further down*, letting yourself sink deep inside the last time you really had fun.

4. If you can't remember the last time you had any fun, perhaps your basic life package needs upgrading. Go see a silly movie. Read a fun book or even start up a garage band!

5. If you're not the type who remembers how to have fun, put this book down and run away from it. Do it now. I'll wait. Are you gone yet? No? Well, I guess you have decided to have fun in spite of what those imperious adult-sounding voices in your head keep telling you!

6. I want you to find that voice in your head that is always telling you what to do—you know, the one that says things like "Eat your vegetables,"

“Comb your hair,” and “You’re not going out of the house dressed like that, young lady!” Or my personal favorite, “Because I said so!”

Move those voices—wherever they are, whatever they sound like—off to the side or, better yet, behind you, way behind you, now shrinking into a tiny dot in the distance.

There. That’s better, isn’t it?

**A MATRIX ENERGETICS PRACTITIONER’S STORY ABOUT  
ACCESSING INNER GUIDANCE**

*One of many amazing experiences/shifts in my life that have transpired since encountering Matrix Energetics: I recently awoke in the middle of the night in a full panic that, at the time, felt crippling. I began to worry about everything possible: fears about money, life, school, and health. I was panicking about any and every thing that could be stressed about. I had no idea why I was panicking. I knew better than this, and yet the more I fought it, the more my body tightened and the more stressed I got.*

*Then around 5:30 AM I heard a voice say, “Go to the gym.” Yeah, right. It was 5:30 in the morning! There was no way I was going to the gym. And I knew how to split myself into a parallel so that “other” part of me could go work out. I needed to stay put and figure this “stress” thing out. I heard the voice again firmly say, “GO*

*TO THE GYM!” I replied angrily, “Fine. You win!” I got up and went to the gym.*

*When I got there, I saw some of my friends who were early-morning trainers. I smiled, said hello, and waved. They all acted like they didn’t see me, like I was invisible. I shrugged it off and looked for a machine to run on. I headed for the usual machine I would run on but my body kept on walking (like I had no control) until I got to a new piece of cardio equipment. I set my heart rate monitor watch (which showed heart rate and calories burned) and started running.*

*Within five minutes of working out I was drenched. I’m in shape and I never sweat that much so quickly. The next moment a voice inside my head said, “Close your eyes.” Intuitively, I knew I was about to learn and experience something new. I did what I was told.*

*I closed my eyes and heard, “Draw a hologram of yourself.” Before the voice was even done saying those words, a hologram of me was right in front of me, in the center of what seemed like a black sky. Walking in front of my vision and close enough to touch it, I saw white light, the dust of glitter, and something swaying. It was another me—my higher self, my heart self (whatever you want to call it). My higher self was working on the hologram of me!*

*The next thing I knew it was reaching out to the hologram, pulling cords off, clearing it, and noticing what it noticed. Then from behind the hologram, from the depths of the dark sky, came numbers (frequencies), and they were flying toward the hologram. Parts of the hologram would light up, and that's where the frequencies would go and do what they needed to do.*

*Then out of nowhere some of my guides (Grandma, Einstein, my dog, Jake, Jesus, Buddha, and Angels) appeared, and I heard them say, "Let's play." It felt like we all sat around the round table. In the center was the hologram of me. Around the whole table was everyone else, including my higher self, and we were all there to play. In the hologram I was shown that there was no difference between them and me; we were all equal because we all came from the source of love.*

*Then I heard the voice again, saying, "Find peace." That's when I felt that my legs were still running, and my physical arm moved quickly behind me. I could feel my arm reaching much farther than physically possible and I grabbed an "object"*

*that felt like peace. I brought it in and dropped it directly over the hologram. The moment I released it, the hologram fell from its stationary form in the dark sky. It disappeared, and everything and everyone was gone.*

*For the first time since I had closed them, my eyes opened, and as they did so, it was like I took the first breath of my life. I felt such an ease of peace and comfort. I was not sure what had just happened. I looked at the machine and saw it read forty minutes. I couldn't believe it! Then I looked at my watch (heart rate monitor) for further proof and it told me I had burned eight hundred calories in forty minutes!*

*That is not possible, so I reviewed my heart rate monitor record captured through the workout. It was all over the place: 105 to 190 to 210 . . . on and on it went.*

*I got off the machine looking for a friend to whom I could explain what had just happened, but again my friends acted like they could not see me. I*

*called people on my phone, and they had to stop me from talking and apologized because all they could hear was “blah, blah, blah, blah . . .”*

*I am truly honored to have experienced such an incredible awakening! Someone once asked me if I could go back and feel it again, and I said, “Yup, it is right here.”*

*And without trying, my hand moved toward a shape off to the left of my body, grabbed on, and brought me full peace and openness.*

*— TS, Matrix Energetics Certified Master Practitioner*

**22**

## **THE LITTLE BOOK OF MARK’S BIG**

### **ADVENTURES**

By now you are familiar with Dr. Mark Dunn, my best friend and former teaching partner for the Matrix Energetics seminars; you also know about his propensity for misadventures. He had a less-than-auspicious beginning in his career as a professional clairvoyant. Mark sees things that the average individual normally cannot and is often amazingly accurate. But it was not always the case.

### **DR. DUNN’S JOURNEY INTO MASTERY: WHAT A LONG STRANGE**

#### **TRIP IT’S BEEN**

When Mark began studying with me more than ten years ago, he, of his own admission, could not see, hear, or feel anything beyond the normal purview of the territory of the five senses. He used to get exasperated with me when I would come up with some piece of clinical information that was not obtained through the normal avenues of medical information gathering. He would jump up and exclaim (the conscious mind’s objection to information that is obtained through unconventional channels or methods), “*How do you know that? Don’t try to tell me you ‘heard it’*”

*because that just makes me crazy!”*

In order to help him have all the advantages I could provide for him, at one point I actually put a boom box under the chair where he sat in the room with me every day. I played a cassette tape of subliminal suggestions buried deep within a sonic landscape of surf sounds and pink noise. I don't know if that actually helped, but if you like the idea of suggestion for accessing altered states, *you can pretend you are*

*listening to this same cassette whenever you read this book.*

At one turning point in his evolving awareness, Mark and I were attending a basic course on the beginning process of Shamanic Journeying, or inner travel. Mark had amazing mental encounters with Spike, the vampire from the *Buffy the Vampire Slayer* series, Merlin the Magician, and Jabba the Hutt in a jeans store! Either something wasn't quite right with that boy's brain or he was beginning to show tantalizing initial glimpses into the complex and amazing abilities that he demonstrates so easily today on a daily basis (such as accessing archetypal and dream imagery). Based on what I know about this incredible individual, I'll go with the latter interpretation!

Interestingly, the person who taught this basic Journeying course admitted to the class that at first she couldn't Journey at all! When she was first exposed to shamanism, she struggled daily for two years before she had a single successful Journey. She just refused to give up. *There is no such thing as failure in the*

*process of developing your intuitive capabilities. Everything is just results and*

*information.* Persist in a relaxed manner and you will develop your own extrasensory abilities. Key points to developing any new ability: Relax and let go.

Do not judge. Mentally create a safe environment where you can explore altered states and paranormal abilities.

## MARK'S FIRST INNER GUIDE

Shortly after attending that first Shamanic course, Mark received his first “inner guide”: a cartoon moose—and no, it wasn't the famous one! This guide told Mark some apparently useful things from time to time. There was only one minor problem. Most of the stuff Mark heard with his “inner ear” was initially wrong, according to his clients' feedback.

I repeat: There is no such thing as failure. There are only results and information.

The antics of Mark's guidance were in keeping with a song my professor at Bastyr once wrote called “My Guide Clyde.” In the song, Clyde kept telling the person all these things that in retrospect turned out to be completely wrong. In the final verse the protagonist finally gets around to *asking the key question*: How come many of the things you've told me turned out to be false? Well, Clyde the Guide was an alcoholic and was just making stuff up. It is good to test the spirits to make sure that they are not habitually imbibing them! Developing the spirit of discrimination is one of the first tests you must pass on the journey to spiritual enlightenment. This teaching in some form is emphasized in all the Mystery School traditions I am familiar with.

***Always question the information you receive through any and all means.*** Never become complacent in this process and it will serve you well, adding new dimensions into your experiences in this life. With that being said, let me caution you not to ever become discouraged or to give up. And never assume that you know anything or that what you view as reality represents an absolute truth. As you grow in your ability to perceive in a new or fresh way, your perceptions of what is true for you will frequently morph and change.

About the same time the cartoon moose showed up as Mark's guide, another phenomenon also began occurring in his world. Sometimes when Dr. Dunn was talking to a client, he would see intermittent blue bubbles or spheres interacting with some part of the client's anatomy. Wisely not trusting his initial psychic impressions, if he saw a blue bubble sitting on a client's shoulder, he would ask the client if he or she had a problem with

that particular limb. More often than not, the client would often exclaim, “No!” It got better over time—much better! Notice what you notice, but never assume that the information is real or ultimately important. In other words, judge ye righteous judgments. What that means is follow the energy in the moment.

After putting up with the “blue dot phenomenon” for a time, Mark decided he would try priming the pump to increase his accuracy. One day I walked into his office area and discovered him huddled over an anatomy chart with a pendulum dangling loosely between his index and middle finger. He was patiently posing yes and no questions about his next client before he physically arrived in the office for his appointment. ***Find or seek out your own ways of obtaining personalized***

***intuitive information.*** Some people use muscle testing, pendulums, dream imagery, lucid dreaming, shamanic journeying, meditation, and other methods. Explore and find out what works for you. This proved to be a process involving a lot of trial and error, but gradually over a period of a year, his accuracy began to steadily improve.

Since Mark always verified whatever information he got intuitively, there was no danger or shame in trying to predict things about his clients. This provided a conceptual safe haven in which his talents steadily grew and blossomed. Trust but verify. Never assume psychic information is accurate or correct. Constantly seek verification through some means, and strive to continually improve your accuracy in simple and useful ways.

## **ADVANCED LESSONS IN DUALITY**

Maybe you don’t quite believe in Angels. My dear friend Mark wasn’t sure about them either. After all, he had never seen one and certainly could not openly claim that they had ever saved his life. Mark had heard all the stories but had never consciously experienced an Angel. He prayed and meditated and cajoled, but no Angels appeared. So one day he decided to make his own. Having chosen a course of action, he researched everything he could find about Angels on the internet. In his research, he found the most information about Archangel Gabriel, so he decided he would model his own personal Angel on him.

By engaging in a deep meditative process, Mark interacted with the morphic field of the universe. Focusing intently, he attempted to “channel” angelic patterns of energy into a mentally created template. When this virtual reality construct was completed, it gave all the appearances of being alive. You heard right! Mark could walk and talk with his version of Archangel Gabriel.

I didn’t know it at the time, but there actually exists a well-established precedent among a particular spiritual tradition. There is a Hindu sect of Vajrayana yogins who have a practice similar to what Mark intuitively did on his own. They memorize in exacting detail a chosen god form. Over time, the practitioner, through deep meditation and concentration on the chosen form, develops the ability to interact with it in a manner similar to a virtual reality simulation. Eventually, the aspirant of this amazing discipline will be able to see the form as clearly as a table or chair in a room and to interact with it as well. Michael Talbot talks about this process in his book *Mysticism and the New Physics*.

## **THERE MUST HAVE BEEN SOME MAGIC IN THOSE OLD WINGS HE**

### **FOUND**

*(Sung to the tune of “Frosty the Snowman”)*

Mark intuitively hit upon the duality approach, it seems. One day he was working in the office and a client came in having an acute gallbladder attack. The patient was doubled over from the severe pain. This condition can constitute a true medical emergency. Consistent with his duty as a primary portal of entry medical provider, Mark informed her that she should go to the emergency room. She, however, asked if he could try to do something before she exercised that option, so he agreed.

Twenty minutes later the woman was still in a lot of discomfort and Mark had exhausted every possibility in his medical bag of tricks and techniques—or so he thought.

## **GABRIEL GETS REAL**

Looking around the room for anything that might help, his gaze landed on his version of Archangel Gabriel. His virtual Angel was at that moment, of all things, appearing to be eating a peanut butter and banana sandwich! In exasperation Mark addressed the Angel, saying, “Can’t you do anything about this?” Slowly getting up from a seated position, still chewing, the Angel walked over to the client and calmly thrust his noncorporeal hand into her abdomen. Instantly the woman’s pain completely disappeared. “What did you do?” she asked, shocked by the sudden reversal of her symptoms. Mark, feeling a bit ill, told her, “Believe me, ma’am, you really don’t want to know!” With that, Mark impressed upon her the need to still go to the emergency room to be safe. She complied with his request, but for all intents and purposes the crisis was resolved.

I don’t have to tell you that for a time after that everything was all about Angels for Mark. In fact, the day after that experience with the woman with the “hot”

gallbladder, I went into Mark’s room to find him in a meditative position head down on the floor in a posture of reverent awe. I could vaguely see the outline of two brilliant forms standing in front of him. “Sshhh, I am communing with my Angels,”

he informed me. I nodded in silent understanding and gently closed the door behind me on my way out.

## **IN LIGHT OF ALL THIS, NOW WE VISIT THE DARK SIDE**

This was Mark’s beginning and intense crash course on lessons in duality. Surely it is not hard for you to puzzle out. If you set up rules in your unconscious so that you polarize or divide everything into opposites, what do you get on the other side of Angels—the wrong side of the light tracks, shall we say? That’s right. You win a prize. You can just see Bob Barker emceeding some demented otherworldly game of *Truth or Consequences*. If there are Angels in a relative sense, in the expression of that duality there must be Demons. Ta da, tat ta da! (Cue fanfare!) Lions and Tigers and Demons, oh my!

Mark started seeing possessing spirits in every client he worked with. For a time his medical practice looked a lot more like an exorcism than anything taught in medical school. He took this phase in his learning to such a degree that at one point he was asked by another self-styled spiritual warrior to help him exorcise a church of possessing spirits. Who needs to go to the movies when your life starts to look like this?

For a number of months, Mark engaged in the clinical equivalence of spiritual warfare. In primitive cultures and shamanic thought, possessing spirits can be seen to be the cause behind the manifestation of any disease pattern or condition. The New Testament displays the prevalence of this idea in many instances where Jesus performed a healing by casting out unclean spirits. Mark for a time adopted a similar or shamanic model of reality. Everywhere he looked there were possessing spirits!

Eventually, lugging around an imaginary sword with which to do battle with invisible forces loses the force of its charm. And, oh yeah, you can start to go a little nuts! Remember what I have said in other parts of this book: the concept of superposition allows for the state of all possibilities to exist. As soon as you choose a particular perceptual model for reality, you will look at life in all its multivariate aspects through the lens of beliefs that you have chosen to adopt. You will see what you expect to see within the constraints of your individual or cultural model.

If you don't like what you are seeing or experiencing in your life, changing what you look for and expect is an excellent way to begin to mold your life into a more desirable set of experiences. Mark finally realized that his perceptions could be viewed like a kaleidoscope. If he did not like what he was seeing, or if seeing things in that particular manner was not inherently helpful, he could change the scope of his perception. As with a kaleidoscope, when you twist the toy's mechanism, different patterns appear before your very eyes.

When Mark stopped expecting a particular outcome and relaxed, he began to expect that whatever he would see or encounter was uniquely useful in the moment.

If he found himself in an uncomfortable or less-than-useful reality, he adopted the habit of asking the question, “If I were to see something that could really help this individual the most in this moment, what would that be?” Then he would center his awareness gently in his heart and wait for what would present itself. By doing this, he let go of the need to judge or analyze the information, which changed the nature and character of the entire encounter.

This was probably one of the most powerful lessons I learned from Mark. If you don’t like what your experience in life is showing you, drop down into the sacred space of your heart, and from this vantage point ask, “If I were to begin to have a new and better experience in life, what would it look like or feel like?” Trust that the universe hears your inner entreaty, and see how life can change for you. Miracles are everywhere if we can just open our eyes to see them!

**23**

## **CREATING ADVANCED ARTIFICIAL TEMPLATES**

My friend and mentor Dr. M. L. Rees wore a large crystal over his chest in the traditional location of what some cultures and belief systems refer to as the heart chakra.<sup>1</sup> He called this crystal construct a “doc harmonic.” He designed this master crystal to energetically link in to a number of programmed crystalline-based devices, which he kept in his office, located in the most unlikely of places: Sedan, Kansas.

The concept he created was one of programming these devices with a specific intent to heal or correct specific disease conditions or problems.

Dr. Bill Tiller, subtle energy and psychoenergetics expert, talks about imprinting very simple electrical devices with a specifically programmed mental intent to perform very specific tasks—such as adapting the pH in a room or changing other physical parameters that are objectively verifiable and can be measured through scientific instrumentation. He wrote about his

experiments in a wonderful paradigm-shifting book titled *Some Experiments in Science with Real Magic*.

Tiller looks a lot like some people's archetype for a wise wizard. Do you suppose it could be because he embarked on a course in personal self-mastery more than thirty years ago, which included meditation, concentration, and yoga? Tiller is one of the physicists who assessed the claims of Russian scientists concerning psychic abilities during the years of the Cold War.

Many of the scientists who watched Uri Geller and Russian psychics perform feats involving apparent psychic prowess proclaimed that what was being observed was the result of sleight of hand and sideshow trickery. Tiller was one of the few dissenting voices that spoke up and proclaimed that he thought there was something to what he was observing.

Tiller reasoned that perhaps we had not developed measuring equipment sensitive enough to be able to assess what was "really going on." He further reasoned that it must be possible to develop these attributes to some extent, so he resolved to fine-tune his sensory mechanisms by embarking on a journey of self-discovery and spiritual discipline.

Over the course of years, Tiller formulated an evolving set of hypotheses that strived to account for the phenomena he witnessed so many years ago in that government lab. His journey of personal discovery and self-mastery continues to this day.

Rees was very scientifically minded; he was even part of the engineering team that developed the little black boxes that were fitted into Allied planes in World War II. These devices would emit a signal to our forces on the ground that the plane was identifiable as friend rather than foe. Rees then studied osteopathy and chiropractic, earning degrees in both disciplines. But he did not stop there. Over a period of forty years, he developed many creative innovations and techniques that other doctors learned in order to better serve suffering humanity. Some of the things Rees discovered and developed bordered on and even crossed over into what would appear to be Magical Realms.

In certain ways Tiller and Rees are very much alike: both are pioneers, always seeking answers that reach beyond the thinking of our current limiting mind-set. Just like Tiller, Rees knew that there were many things he was experiencing that could not be explained by his engineering or medical backgrounds.

Resolved to make a difference, he set upon his own course of self-discovery. This led him to the secrets and traditions of many cultures concerning the hidden side of life. He confided to me that after years of frustration and much personal effort, he finally had a personal breakthrough where he could actually see the energies and forces he was working with. He used his abilities garnered over many years to heal and bring comfort to all who came to him for help.

Rees personally trained me in the use of his crystal-based technology called

“Harmonics.” In addition, he personally inducted me into the order of healers that he took under his wing for training. This organization was called ISHO, which stood for the International Systemic Health Organization. It was dedicated to the healing of the ills and diseases of mankind. Rees once told me that he could “go into any hospital, and if given ten minutes with each patient, [he] could clear out the facility.”

I cannot personally attest to the validity of that particular claim, but during the time I was privileged to study with him, I witnessed and accomplished some amazing things.

For example, my first son, Nate, was born with bronchitis, asthma, and allergies.

He was prone to frequent bouts of pneumonia, which took hold of his frail little body with regularity every couple of months (as detailed in my first book, *Matrix Energetics*). Neither conventional medicine nor alternative approaches addressed his particular needs, so I tried to learn everything I could that might provide a solution, or at least help. I read every weird book and studied every strange technique I could get my hands on. Thankfully, my chiropractic school’s library was a compendium of unusual and downright arcane knowledge. It was there that I first encountered Rees’s

book *The Art and Practice of Chiropractic*. Unable to decipher much of anything the book was referring to, I called Dr. Rees's office and, to my surprise, he personally answered the phone. I inquired if I could ask him some questions. He replied, "It's your dime, young man." I then said, "Dr. Rees, I did not expect to get you on the phone. I am reading your book, and it seems like you are from outer space." He laughed softly, "Well, that could be, young man."

I spoke to him for a while, and then he made me an offer. "I tell you what. If you can get a few students together, I will come out and teach you guys." This conversation led me to invite him to come to Dallas to give a seminar to a select few students who had interests similar to my own. The chiropractic college was progressive, but not that progressive, so we assembled at the annex of the school, aka the nearby Holiday Inn.

Rees created the system he called Harmonics. He looked all over the world to find precious gemstones and various other things that could be used as a repository for healing energies. These harmonic constructs could be shaped and molded into powerful artificial templates for healing. Although Rees did not call it such, I believe this technology was based upon principles of scalar physics, which I've referred to in other parts of this book. These things looked like little plastic disks, and he would put various crystals within them at certain key geometric positions.

He would then solder them together so that they formed a kind of circuit. Then he put metal flakes over clear plastic resin to act as an antenna to pull in information from the aether. He would then smooth over the top of the resin, allowing it to harden. To complete the device, he would inscribe informational symbols on the face of the implement. These engineered templates could then be activated by the doctor's focused will.

Then he tied certain spiritual forces to it and would metaphorically insert and activate it into the person it was created for. Obviously, trust is the foundational principle here. He actually made hundreds of these disks. At one time I owned a modest set of them. He had one for minerals, one for viruses, and so on. Once he had hundreds of these, he programmed them into a matrix in his office. Then he passed out "Doc Harmonic" master crystals, and the doctors open to this system would just call up the energy

they needed into their cupped right hand and people's diseases would go away.

If you create something like that based on the engineering principles of a paleo-ancient science and spiritual technology, it can be incredibly powerful!

Because I was seeking the Holy Grail of healing techniques, my brown leather medical bag did not hold the traditional medical implements. Instead, I had a

“double-headed” adjusting instrument, a plastic case full of strangely labeled glass vials, and a few of Rees's Harmonic crystal technology “thingies.” These objects became the symbols for my awakening into new dimensions of healing technology and knowledge.

In one of my student clinic shifts at the college, a young woman came in for treatment and for some reason chose me as her intern. When I took her medical history, she confided to me that she had not had a period in eight months but wasn't pregnant. Since she was only twenty-five years old, this was possibly medically significant.

After I performed an overly thorough physical, with the exception of a gynecological exam, my thoughts turned to how I might be able to help her. I had her lie faceup on the adjusting table in the exam room and rooted around in my medical bag for clinical inspiration. My hand was drawn to one of Doc Rees's harmonic contraptions. This particular device had a bright turquoise plastic base in which was set a large quartz crystal shaped like a pyramid. Not knowing what else to do, and having limited clinical options, I held the base of the crystal device and pointed the apex of the crystal in the direction of the woman's lower abdomen.

Developing a vague glimmer of a plan of action, I moved the device in smooth, slow circles above the patient. This activity went on for a couple of minutes, and then the lady began to writhe and move on the table. I wasn't sure what she was experiencing, but if I had to guess from her facial expression and body language, it wasn't entirely unpleasant. As this development came to its peak activity, she suddenly informed me that her

period had just started right there on the table. I had no idea what had just happened, but I was rapidly developing a deepening respect for weird medical approaches.

I did not hear from that particular patient again. Six months later, however, I got a call in my new office in Montana, where I had moved after graduating from chiropractic school. The caller on the other end of the line informed me that he was a member of the Texas Chiropractic Board and that I was in trouble. It turned out that the doctor I was speaking with was the boyfriend of my patient who had the miraculous menstrual cure—and he was not amused with me.

He could not even begin to deal with the weirder aspects of his girlfriend's experience, so he focused on something he could understand. He accused me of practicing medicine without a license, intimating that he was thinking about turning me over to the Texas Attorney General's office for criminal prosecution. Perhaps with an echo of the personality I would later take full possession of, I asked him what grounds he had for the accusation, knowing full well that he wasn't about to discuss crystals and weird implements.

I was right. He focused like a pit bull on the fact that I had told his girlfriend that I could adjust her lower back vertebrae to free the nerves of her pelvis from impingement. The L5 (lumbar five) nerve supplies the uterus, via the pudendal plexus and other tributaries. His contention was that by adjusting L5 to help uterine function, I was practicing medicine without a license. "What an 'ass-set' this guy is to his profession," I thought.

I had had enough of his passive-aggressive posturing. I told him that in a book called *The Science, Art and Philosophy of Chiropractic* by D. D. Palmer, it was specifically stated that too much or too little nerve force to an area could cause disease. Further, through adjustments to the vertebrae in order to release the neural impingements, the life force and flow of information to the area supplied by the affected nerves could be released, thus restoring the target organs and tissues to proper functioning health.

"Have you ever heard of D. D. Palmer?" (the founder of Chiropractic) I roared. I then slammed down the phone, never to hear from him again. I

guess he went back to his college textbooks and looked it up. Maybe his girlfriend's new reference for effective chiropractic care had become weird crystal devices and he couldn't deal with that.

If you think that this was an isolated event with this technology, I will share a few more stories that may convince you otherwise. The first one that comes to mind is about the man who came to me with such an acutely painful lower back condition that there was nothing I could do within the narrow parameters of "normal"

chiropractic practice. Resolved to wing it, I reached into Dr. Rees's bag of tricks and settled upon a brightly colored plastic doodad. This one was almost a fluorescent blue color and had four small quartz pyramids embedded in the plastic base. "This has gotta do something," I thought.

I led the suffering patient into a quiet, dark room in the back of the office and had him lie facedown on one of my adjusting tables. I put the device flat on top of the man's lower back, turned off the lights, and left the room. Forty-five minutes later I checked in on him and was shocked when he announced that all the pain was completely gone! As proof of this startling statement, he stood up, no longer bent over double in agony. A huge smile was painted across his face.

Reaching down, he grasped my hand gratefully and said, "Thanks, doc. You are a miracle worker!" I was quick to assure him that I did nothing and had no idea why or how he was so much better. Later, when I told Rees this story, he laughed heartily in amazement. The device that I had used was designed to work like the trap used by the Ghost-busters. Talk about feeling like *The Man Who Knew Too Little*. I had no clue, but it had worked anyway. Rees said, "He must have had a 'hitchhiker' causing the trouble."

One last weird fact in this case: when the patient stood up after being treated, his breath had a fruity alcoholic odor to it, which he did not have when he came in. That smell is one I associate with diabetics whose bodies are producing too many ketones. This suggested that a biochemical change had also occurred in the process.

One other vignette about Rees technology concerns a man who lived with chronic, intractable pain in his heels and the soles of his feet. Emboldened by my previous successes, I put another one of the strange little devices on the client's lower back and had him lie down to relax. Sure enough, after about twenty minutes he announced to me that he was feeling quite strange, as if he were floating above his body. I had him stand up and walk across the room. Both the client and I were overjoyed to discover that the previous chronic pain in his feet had melted away into nothing.

Rees would assign "spiritual beings" to the software after he decided what each one was to accomplish. He would then assign the energy of the beings to the little points anchored by the gems. This then becomes an engineered interdimensional matrix or manifold that accesses hyperspace dimensions.

A problem arose however in that Rees's work started to feel alien and somehow disturbing. I became a bit distrustful and felt like I was not supposed to use that technology anymore, so I stopped. Then one day a strange thing happened.

I was traveling with a very psychic friend of mine in Livingston, Montana, and it was a cloudy day. There was a big circular cloud that seemed to be following our car. My psychic friend concluded that it was an alien grey ship. He said that I had something they were interested in. I had a device from Rees with me that was programmed with spiritual and energetic technologies. So I handed it to him. He looked at me and said, "Very cool, Richard. I am talking to the captain of the alien grey ship above us, and he says he likes your technology." I responded, "You keep it."

Many years later the Angelic intelligences that sometimes advise me indicated that it was time to re-create a new version of Rees's technology. Accordingly, I was given new detailed instructions concerning how to create a kind of energetic software that some might call imaginary. This Angel (or whatever it was) said, "We want you to call them Modules, and we will guide you step by step in their construction." Okay. There is that trust thing again: either you do trust or you do not.

Mark and I decided that trust was the better approach, and we spent some serious hours creating what the Angels had beckoned.

What Mark and I actually wound up doing was assigning sacred geometry patterns merged with Kabalistic knowledge and quantum physics patterns, arranged in grids. We took that as our starting template. We had books on minerals and gems with nice color pictures and descriptions of everything, and we went through the books clairvoyantly until we were told to use a particular one.

When we had enough components for the construction of a particular Module, we would then ask where they needed to be placed in the template we were building.

Working with the virtual forms of Angels and other virtual beings, we would ask questions such as “Who wants to play on this point on the diamond?” These forces were engineered from the energy of the vacuum and placed strategically within a desired form in order to hold the software instructions for our design.

In essence, we developed an interdimensional technology that holds a space from the zero-point field and creates a conceptual bridge point from the imaginary to the real. This describes, by the way, a complex conjugate number in quantum physics where minus one represents the imaginary quality, and then there is the real number, or quality, as well. When you multiply the two together, the imaginary component cancels out, and you end up with a real vector or coordinate in space-time. This is exactly how this energetic technology works. It is a spiritual technology that is engineerable and reproducible.

Here is how Bob, one of my students, creates a Module. Bob is an RN in a hospital and freely plays with Matrix Energetics and Modules, such that he is now often referred to as the Matrix Magician. He reaches into a dimensional window and pulls out what he feels, trusting that the exact thing that he needs will be there waiting. Speaking from the true authority of his magnanimous heart center, Bob simply says, “Create a Module for this condition, thing, or circumstance.” Grasping the newly created virtual technology in his right hand, he activates it and then installs it wherever his perceptual awareness guides him. Nothing could be simpler.

What is his first technique? TRUST.

## CREATE A MODULE EXERCISE

So this is Bob's process: *Create*—Reach into your mind's creative window. *Wait*

*and trust*—You will actually feel something building in your hand. If you do not, then trust that you did. *Install*—When you say install, you will see, or know, where it needs to go. *Activate*—Now it has that intelligence in it, and it is ready to do things. It is that easy.

Bob's process rocks! It is so simple and yet so powerful. You might as well use stuff that is working really well. You do not want to use stuff that does not work so well.

My guides told me that there are quantum Angels from the seventeenth dimension that make this stuff. Whether you believe that or not is immaterial to me.

After teaching so many seminar participants about the Modules, the morphic field of their reality has grown large and powerful indeed!

You do not have to have a medical mind-set, and if you do not have any reason to do this, then do not. But it is kind of fun. The real point of doing this is to play and trust. If you can learn to do this, then if your life is at stake, you will have already established momentum. In this way, you can build the muscles of faith in things hoped for but not yet seen.

You may choose to construct Modules the way I do—the mental way—or you can just trust. The latter may be a better way. To summarize again, here is what you do: *Create* the module, *Activate it*, and *Install it*. That is all there is to it. Trust that there is information between the spaces. Really, you do not need to know anything.

You can simply trust that it is already done, and you will receive the best outcome.

Trust is going to be your most useful tool. So if you have issues with trust, you might want to create a module called **trust** to support you. It is very

useful.

How you build your module is based upon your own individual knowledge and intuition. Some of you may say, “I cannot do this” and then you will realize you can.

Others will say, “I can do this,” and then realize maybe not. Still others may say, “I can, but maybe with a little work.” You could also say to yourself, “I want a module for understanding what Dr. Bartlett was talking about.”

Here is a recent story from a student in Matrix Energetics: *Yesterday my son-in-law’s father was taken to the hospital. He was in excruciating pain with swelling in his back where he’d had surgery two weeks ago. When they arrived at the hospital, the family was told that it was most likely a blood clot, especially since it was on his left side. The swelling was causing the nerve pain down his legs.*

*When I talked with my daughter and received this news, he was on his way for an MRI. I started ME I two-pointed for what was needed. It looked to me like there was no blood clot. I imaged the swelling being some sort of fluid that would be absorbed back into his body with no ill effects.*

*Then there was also some sort of Module I downloaded and installed at the site of the swelling. It felt to me that it was to break up any possible congestion.*

*When my daughter came by later that evening, she told me that the MRI had shown only some fluid, which the doctors said would be reabsorbed by his body!*

—**BD**

24

## **THE MANIFESTATION CHAPTER**

Some people are born wizards and other people have to work at it. If you have the ability to manifest things, then chances are that you will. People

who have built a lot of unconscious resources can depend on the world to treat them the way they expect it to. In one unreal sense, there is no you and there is no world. Building rapport with wealth, love, or even the ability to perform healings of yourself and others requires building *coherent useful references*. If you have seen examples of good relationships, or perhaps even had a few yourself, it is much easier to know what ingredients to put into the wish's cauldron for the magic to work. *Can you say*

*“congruence”?*

*To be congruent with magical states of possibility, you must think and feel in the language of magic* or little to nothing happens. I remember watching a Clint Eastwood movie called *Firefox*. Clint was a highly trained American pilot who was sent to Russia to steal its experimental thought-controlled superjet. Clint was able to steal the bird and get airborne without much difficulty. Once he was airborne, a second Russian prototype gave chase. When Clint tried to fire a missile at the pursuer, he couldn't do it until he remembered that he must think in Russian. Every form of success or endeavor has its own language and syntax.

*In order to succeed you must speak and think in the language of the virtual reality game you are attempting to master.* Here's a clue: the phrase “I can't” is universally *not* a cheat code in any of life's simulations. Time and again people have attended the Matrix Energetics seminars thinking that being present with me was somehow going to gift them with the key to the magical siddhis.

If being present in a seminar invokes a magical state, the trap inherent within that belief is what happens when you go home. If you just mimed the language and went through the motions of the techniques taught, that may not be enough. If you are a healer looking for another tool to add to your technique utility belt, that level of experience may work fine for you. If you wish to really master the magic, you must contact and become the inner magician.

Like Clint, if you unconsciously assimilate the language of Matrix Energetics, then you no longer have to consciously think about it. At the level I am referencing, *there is nothing to learn how to do; you have*

*become*. The Ascended Master Saint Germain once said, “There is an alchemical formula, but by the time you discover it you have long since become it.”

One of the methods of opening the way of the inner magician within you is to ask liberating questions such as “If I did fully believe in myself as the master magician, what have I become now?” There is a master within you who is always listening to what you say and how you say it. Your words, as holographic cups of light, form drop by drop the chalice of your inner mastery or misery. It is for you to choose and, having chosen, continue to choose with each breath.

## **THE HAVE AND HAVE NOT RECIPROCAL EQUATION**

Jesus said, “For whosoever hath, to him shall be given and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.”<sup>1</sup> Why do you think he said this? This is what I think: When you are in a consciousness of “have not,” you are constantly instructing your unconscious mind to notice and create more of what you are focusing on. When you habitually do this, you will find more experiences to match what you are focused on. In doing so, you prove to yourself that you are powerful in your state of seeming powerlessness. You create an attraction to what you don’t want or have.

One of the easiest ways to begin manifesting a new life, with all new parameters, is begin to *drop the attractors or charge on what you don’t want*. You begin to realize that there is an equation of consciousness in play here. If you have an electron, a negatively charged particle, then the balanced force is the positively charged proton. Equally, for every photon there is an anti-photon. When the charges are in balance, what you get is a back-and-forth flow, or charged polarity, which creates movement. When you are in the flow, you don’t notice that there is a paired photon/anti-photon.

When you’ve had enough of what you *don’t have*, you don’t have to do things that way anymore. You can then flip into the state of *have*, which is the antithesis or antiparticle to what you don’t have. The have/have not equation is just like the photon/anti-photon pair that creates the *graviton*.

When you pair the have/have not state, you have a balanced charge and you don't notice the presence of duality. What you experience is the flow of the movement between the opposing charges or forces.

The balanced expression of these two extremes represents the electromotive force we call Life. *Life has its ups and downs because this represents a balanced spin or state of flow.*

When you let go of the distinctions that engender a multiplicity of dualities, you have stopped resisting the flow of life. When you lower the resistance to the flow of light as information, you are invoking my version of OM's law. When you stop resisting the flow or tide of events, the current's strength and speed is magnified.

When you begin manifesting a greater current, you could say your chi, or life force, becomes magnetized and magnified.

When your life force is increased, that is when you want to begin to monitor your thoughts, feelings, and unconscious momentum a little more closely. When you turn up the juice, you have more power to focus your intent into manifesting marvelous and magical changes in your life. You also can manifest what you don't want. This is a good reason why you want to maintain a state of childlike wonder and gentle neutrality.

What you manifest doesn't come from the realm of your conscious mind, in any case. If your ability to manifest what you want originated from the domain of the conscious mind, you would continually see the results of your every thought played out in your life in front of you. For most of us, we are not in an entirely positive or negative mind-set all the time. Therefore, the results would probably even out over time. If both positive and negative outcomes were evenly manifested, then the net gain could be seen to be approximately zero.

Thoughts that have no conscious direction still wield just as much force, but do not have a clearly defined destination. Since the power of our thoughts entails the release or expenditure of energy, the charge of our thoughts has to go somewhere. If energy can be neither created nor destroyed but merely changes state, where does the energy of our directionless musings and

desires go? Just like the pairing of the photon/anti-photon, our thoughts are paired or grouped as conscious/unconscious.

Our unconscious thought energy therefore resides in the **morphic field**, or **quantum potential**, of the unconscious mind. Since we are dealing with the paired states of have/have not with every desire, that energy must go somewhere. If we therefore habitually focus on what we want, the energy of opposite polarity or charge, the have-not state, becomes stored potential in the unconscious field.

## **THE CONCEPT OF A MORPHIC FIELD DEFINED**

To remind you what a morphic field is:

*Sheldrake regards the morphic fields as a universal database for both organic (living) and abstract (mental) forms, a field within and around a morphic unit, which organizes the field's characteristic structure and pattern of activity at all levels of complexity. The term morphic field includes morphogenetic, behavioral, social, cultural, and mental fields. Morphic fields are shaped and stabilized by morphic resonance from previous similar morphic units, which were under the influence of fields of the same kind. They consequently contain a kind of cumulative memory and tend to become increasingly habitual. Swiss psychiatrist Carl Jung brought the theory of collective unconscious to our awareness, and with it a similar proposal that a mode of transmission of shared informational patterns and archetypes exists. According to Sheldrake, the theory of morphic fields might provide an explanation for Jung's concept.<sup>2</sup>*

## **TAPPING INTO THE MORPHIC FIELD OF THE MATRIX**

In the beginning of the book, I said that Matrix Energetics has a huge morphic field that allows you, with minimal effort, to step into a unified field of consciousness.

This is worth repeating here since this is indeed the secret to manifestation. It is this powerful group dynamic that allows you to amplify your desires and abilities in service to the collective good of all concerned. This field already exists; it is to your benefit to simply plug in. When you tap into the

morphic field of Matrix Energetics, your results can become more powerful and reliable.

## **CAN YOU SPOT THE FALLACIES IN YOUR THINKING?**

If we invest a lot of energy in manifesting something, an equal amount of paired energy must then be stored as destructive or unmanifested potential. If we then store unconsciously that “have not” energy and attach an emotional charge of fear to those thoughts/feelings, we have, in effect, created an artificial *highly charged quantum-feeling potential*. This is like an electrical potential, which under the right conditions can leap from the ground to the clouds like a lightning bolt.

However, if you can create an artificial potential of studied neutrality with your manifestations, you begin to drain the deep swamp of unconscious fear-based patterns. When this is done over time, you free the negative charge on your human/

divine potential, freeing up more energy to flow unimpeded into the manifestation of the things of your heart’s desire. *Your manifestations are driven by the engine of your beliefs and your experiences*. I used to think it was really hard to change the content of my beliefs and that I had to work really hard at doing it. The idea that deep, lasting change is really hard to achieve is in itself simply another belief.

Here is how one practitioner applies Matrix Energetics to his process for manifestation:

*I’ll try to explain how Matrix works for me, but understand that everyone has a way of interfacing with it, and how I do Matrix may be quite different from how it works for someone else (probably because we all bring different backgrounds and perspectives to it). So you have to play with it and see how it works for you.*

*I rarely have a desired outcome in mind. If you only use Matrix Energetics to manifest what you specifically intend, then you limit it to being able to provide only something that you can imagine. This prevents or limits something BETTER than you can imagine from showing up. Let’s take*

*money for an example. When I two-point my finances, I place the energetic pattern of my finances in front of me. I simply intend that to happen, and I often see it as a pattern.*

*Usually patterns look to me like a luminescent vortex or a very convoluted Borg cube (if you're a Star Trek fan). The shape itself is not important. Trusting that the pattern is in front of you, whether you can imagine it or not, is what's important.*

*(Doing Matrix is all about trust; as Richard says, the more you trust, the more powerful you are.)*

*Knowing that the pattern is in front of me, I reach out (usually physically with my hands) and find a point in the pattern that feels stuck, hard, rigid, or different. Then I search for a second point in the pattern that intensifies the feeling in the second one so that I sense that the two points are connected. Then I drop down and let the two points change into a more useful state, one that feels better than how they were at first.*

*This process has shown to correspond to healthier, more abundant finances. I don't know (and don't need to know) how this occurs. It may be beyond my comprehension. The more I do not know, the more powerful it seems to be. The most important thing is to develop an attitude of trust.*

**—EO**

If you dive deep enough into your own psyche, you can attract whatever you think about—and that is no great secret. The secret is in being able to think about attractive things consistently enough that they *become magnetized* into your personal orbit of “Becoming.” When you resist the flow of the *feel good and trust current*, you give life to and sustain a counterwave of energy called fear and struggle.

Because when you consciously sustain a desire or want, the phase-conjugate opposite reality—exactly and precisely what you don't want—is also manifested.

This counterwave can interfere with your creative visualizations, affirmations, and wishful constructs. You are bleeding off precious spiritual and psychic energy.

When you do this, the result is that you have less energy available to manifest and sustain the focus of your creative intent. *One of the best ways to manifest what you want is to stop wanting and stop manifesting.* In this way there are fewer struggles, thus freeing up far more energy to be directed unconsciously and unerringly to the target of your secret desires. Things will just show up and *people will think that you're lucky!*

## **THE SECRET TO MANIFESTATION LIES IN THE NOT DOING**

Many of us in this culture seem to believe that in order to make something happen *we have to do more.* But the more we do, the more involved we become in the need to do, have, and be. When we need to have something in order to know that “we be alright, we be making an error.” My little daughter with autism is always saying in times of emotional upheaval or crisis (yes, I do have plenty of those moments still),

*“Be all right, be all right!”* This sweet voice always underscores for me the fact that the universe is all about Love. We are evolving because “evolve” is an anagram for

*“loving.” Love is the decisive, cohesive force in the universe.*

## **SUPERCHARGING YOUR MANIFESTATIONS**

We all have a well-developed ability and momentum to manifest things. The question then becomes, which part of our programming runs our manifestations? Is it our conscious expectations or deeply ingrained unconscious belief patterns?

Which one do you think it is? A question to ask yourself is, “Do I like what I am manifesting, and if not, how do I change direction?” If you set off into the waters of the unconscious and want to change things in your life, it helps to set the sail of your intent in the direction that the wind is blowing.

## **WHICH WAY IS YOUR PSYCHIC WIND BLOWING?**

One time-tested way to determine the wind's direction is to wet your finger and hold it up in the air, rotating it all around you until you feel the force of the air currents on your finger. You can do this psychically as well, and you might want to stop reading, put this book down right now, and hold your index finger up in the air.

Move it slowly around you in a complete circle, probing and feeling for a change in yourself or your inner state. Don't overanalyze what you feel, but look for a direction that points you toward a state of feeling really good. When you catch the drift of that feeling, psychically push off from your life's emotional sandbar and move out in the direction that the wind would blow you.

## **A MANIFESTATION EXERCISE**

Do an experiment with me. Pick something right now, while you are reading this, that you would like to see shift in your life. Got it? Good. Mentally extend that thing out in front of you several feet or more as a single point in space. Now, without considering what the result would be, choose unconsciously a world of possibilities where that condition or thing you desire could show up differently. Now let go of the need to do anything. Feel the expansion for the state of possibility as you collapse the former reality into the new one. Now let go and accept the change that has taken place.

If you really do this and you enter into this exercise and feel it, your life will change. I have done this many times and been absolutely astounded at how quickly long-standing patterns in my life have completely changed! Know that when you perform this exercise, it is already done. Space and time do not exist in the moment of the cosmic blink.

Every time you read a story in this book about how someone's life changed by applying these principles, you can apply the same principles in your own way, to every aspect of your life. Do not be concerned about what you are doing because this does not involve doing anything. You are learning a new

skill set that teaches you how to access and to evolve into your own unique appreciation and understanding of the secrets of the Matrix.

Here is how one Master Practitioner demonstrates his process of manifestation: **MANIFESTING COLESLAW**

*My third seminar was profoundly, earth-shatteringly different in ways incomprehensible to my conscious mind. It became exceedingly clear that I could connect with any person, place, or thing regardless of where I was (first point), or it was (second point). I realized that I did not have to go to the second point because I was already there; I am it.*

*I merely shift my awareness of me as me to my awareness of me as I'm there. My perception expands beyond space and time, and I enter into a state of being where existing in a magically whimsical universe becomes my favorite flavor of reality.*

*The following is what showed up at lunch on one of those perfectly ordinary Matrix days.*

*I was being seated in the restaurant when a group of attendees who had already ordered invited me to join them. I read the menu and decided on a burger and coleslaw. Upon placing my order, I was informed that the restaurant had run out of coleslaw. Sorry, but that just felt wrong to me, so I put my hand up to see if I could find some anywhere in the restaurant. Instantly I found some; I felt it. I could see it in my hand. I turned to the waiter, held out my hand, and said, "Look. It's right here in my hand. You do have some. Could you please get me a small bowl?" He grumbled and left for the kitchen.*

*A few moments later he returned to tell me that the chef had looked everywhere and was absolutely certain that there was no coleslaw. At this point the kind folks who had so graciously invited me to join them began to lose patience with my insistence on having coleslaw. I assured them that if I could find it, feel it, and see it, it did exist and no one was going to convince me otherwise. That was purely and simply my new, improved reality.*

*The next moment I heard myself telling the waiter to “enter the kitchen and turn left. There will be a tall cabinet standing next to a shorter one. Inside the short one, behind the white tub” is where he would find my coleslaw. He grunted and headed toward the kitchen again.*

*Three minutes later the waiter popped out of the kitchen with a huge tray of coleslaw for me and all the others who had been given potato salad instead. He was bewildered and mumbled repeatedly that the coleslaw was right where I had said it was. I knew without knowing—without ever going into the kitchen—and I trusted what was showing up.*

*—WM, Matrix Energetics Certified Master Practitioner*

## **BUSTING LOOSE FROM THE REALITY GAME**

From one perspective, we create our problems. Utilizing the *All Power* of universal intent, we create the appearance of our problems so that we can have an interesting life. Robert Scheinfeld, author of *Busting Loose from the Money Game*, describes in his book the process wherein we create the holograms or virtual picture shows of our life’s experiences. He believes that in a very real sense we are all the actors, the screenplay

writer,

and

the

director

in

the

science

fiction-romantic-comedy-action-drama we call our life.

*Everything we observe and experience is a holographic projection played out on the cinema screen of our earthly existence. As the director of our drama, we can choose at any time to rewrite the screenplay and even recast or recreate the scenes of our earlier experiences so that they play out differently. This idea reminds me of an old song from Jethro Tull's concept album *Passion Play*. There is a verse in that song that says, "We've got you taped, you're in the play. How does it feel to be in the play? How does it feel to play the play? How does it feel to be the play?"*

At the level of mind where the universal hologram is created and sustained, there is no such thing as poverty, disease, or suffering of any kind. These are just fluctuations and patterns of energy, which carry no negative context. So if what you have created no longer amuses you, then you can re-create, recast the players, and rewrite your experiences in a new way. Your life is like an episode of reality television and it is carefully scripted.

Scheinfeld says that everything you experience and see around you is just you following the script, which your Universal Self has given you to play with for your own growth and entertainment. When you start to realize this and you begin to reclaim your power, that energy comes back to you requalified and ready to be used for your next venture or reality simulation.

Here is an example of magical manifestation by one of my students, a masterful wizard:

*We are publishers, but our medium for publishing is the Internet rather than print media. We have a variety of websites and earn income through monetizing them with affiliate links and Google AdSense, etc. Anyway, this is an experience I had prior to reading the book *Busting Loose from the Money Game*. It led me to understand more deeply how to live in what is referred to as *Phase-2 living*, so that when I did read *Busting Loose from the Money Game*, I could embrace this natural state to greater degrees of conscious awareness.*

*Dr. Bartlett's publicist contacted our company about reviewing his book *Matrix Energetics: The Art of Science and Transformation*. Upon reading the description from his publicist, I had a hunch that Dr. Bartlett had a deep wisdom to share and that this was not just a rehashed technique or healing*

*modality that was already available in some other form. So I personally requested a review copy. Days went by, and then one day, I went to the mailbox and found a package from the publicist. I felt a shiver when I retrieved the envelope from the mailbox ... you know, like when you get that certain tap on your shoulder to pay attention. I went inside the house, ripped open the envelope, and stared at the cover. Pouncing on the couch, I began reading. I thought to myself ... yup, this feels different, exciting, and promising.*

*My partner noticed I was diverting my attention from my normal schedule and inquired what I was up to. All I could tell him was I had a feeling that I had found something that was going to bring together many things I had always known. Then I went back to reading.*

*I took the rest of the day and read the book from cover to cover (much like I did with *Busting Loose* from the Money Game, which Dr. Bartlett had mentioned to the participants at one of his workshops that I later attended).*

*As I began playing with some of the ideas in *Matrix Energetics*, I noticed a real excitement brewing in my being. We had been struggling with our business due to new algorithms with Google that were adversely affecting our website traffic, and our income had also dipped to an all-time low. The timing was perfect. What I was reading was giving me a renewed sense of hope. I wasn't sure how, but I felt I was being given a key—not to worry, but change my conscious perception.*

*Later that evening, an image of a green spiral grid floated across my internal visual screen. Hmm, what to do with this? How might this be useful? Then I got the idea of playing with it in ways that Dr. Bartlett described in the book—incorporating a quantum two-point technique. So I created a place on this green spiraling grid that represented our websites and another point that represented Google. I stood in my office like a mad alchemist, raising my hands in the air, connecting dots, seeing little spiders jump out from point to point on the grid, eagerly moving about. It became a mesmerizing dance, and if someone had walked into the room and looked at me they, might have thought I was conducting an invisible orchestra.*

*This whole procedure took about three or four minutes. It was so fun. What the heck; no harm in playing, right? Well, here is where this story gets very interesting.*

*Around twelve hours later, I sat down at my computer to work and glanced at our Web traffic. Something just didn't look right. There had to be some kind of error.*

*How could that be? Our traffic had spiked and our income had also taken a much-needed turn for the better. The numbers looked like magic. (And they have remained on track ever since that day.)*

*I ran into my life and business partner's office and told him that life was never going to be the same! We scheduled a trip to meet Dr. Bartlett at one of his seminars. And we have been practicing Matrix Energetics ever since. The nature of Phase-2 living and the transformation art of Matrix Energetics seem like a marriage made in heaven. It seems to me that everything is connected; all things are always available—it just depends how and when you choose to “rotate your conscious perception” to notice what is always there, or what you imagine to be there, so that it can be there.*

*I hope that anyone who reads this story gets a sense on how future events can affect the present and past and how everything is connected. I believe that working with the concept of grids and templates enlivened with imagination, intention, and intuition might be an effective tool. When we play, we invoke magic because our mind is not interfering, fretting, and measuring what isn't.*

—**SB**

When you begin to say consistently and without judgment to all aspects of your existence, “I love you. I release you from limiting patterns and reclaim you as pure universal source,” then the energy you have invested begins to flow back to you.

That reminds me of the final scenes of the movie *The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy*: After the earth has been destroyed, it is re-created and put back

together just like it was before.

The more you intensify and turn up the rheostat of your awareness potential, the more access you are granted to magical realms. Different natural laws function here that allow you to perform feats that to the uninformed might appear to be miraculous in nature. The true nature of miracles is entirely consistent with natural law. It is only natural that universal consciousness is unlimited in potential and scope.

Within the enlightened potential state of universal being, the concept of limitation is unnatural. Tom Bearden states that the idea that there are laws that govern nature is just plain stupid. Bearden says, “You can do anything at all; it might just take you a lifetime to figure out how to do some things.”<sup>3</sup> *There are no limitations beyond*

*what you can and cannot conceive of doing. Why wait a lifetime? Begin now!*

(αιθήρ)

## **MATRIX GLOSSARY**

**Abrams, Albert:** Born in San Francisco in 1863, Abrams founded radionics, a method for diagnosing and treating pathologies in the body using vibrational frequencies. A graduate of the University of California, he wrote several medical textbooks and eventually gained recognition as a specialist in diseases of the nervous system. In the course of his ongoing research, Abrams discovered that diseases could be measured in terms of energy, and he devised the Oscilloclast, an instrument with calibrated dials that enabled him to identify and measure disease reactions and intensities in blood samples.<sup>1</sup> *See also* path-Oscilloclast; radionics.

**aether physics:** Also spelled ether or æther, aether was the poetic

personification in Greek mythology of the clear upper air breathed by the Olympians. In ancient and medieval sciences, aether was a classical concept sometimes referred to as the fifth element in a number of theories, including alchemy and natural philosophy. In physics, it is a theoretical, universal

substance predominantly believed during the nineteenth century to act as the medium for transmission of electromagnetic waves, such as light and x-rays, much as sound waves are transmitted by an elastic media like air. The aether was assumed to be weightless,

transparent,

frictionless,

and

undetectable

chemically

or

physically—literally permeating all matter and space. The theory met with increasing theoretical opposition in 1881 by the Michelson-Morley experiment, which was designed specifically to detect the motion of the Earth through the aether but demonstrated no such effect.<sup>2</sup>

**antiparticle/anti-wave:** The time-reversal (phase-conjugation) of a reference wave, or, in other words, the anti-wave of the reference wave.<sup>3</sup>

**archetypes:** In Jungian psychology, any of several innate ideas or patterns in the psyche, expressed in dreams, art, and other subconscious processes as certain basic symbols or images. Archetypes act as the core focus around which the experiences and contents of our psyche are formed. “Everything in nature can be described in terms of geometry. From the dance of atoms to the revolutions of the planets, every type of growth and motion is governed by the same set of laws. These laws are portrayed through the symbolism of geometric shapes and forms. This was the domain of dreams, the unexpressed or unarticulated—images that, by their very design, were intended to engage the unconscious. The use of archetypal imagery provides a bridge between the realms of mind, the imagination, and the domain of physical manifestation.”<sup>4</sup>

**artificially generated quantum potential:** A scalar potential is composed of, or partially contains, an artificially assembled bidirectional wave set. See E. T.

Whittaker for proof that a “scalar potential” is actually a harmonic set of hidden bidirectional, longitudinal electromagnetic phase-conjugate wave pairs. Each wave pair consists of a wave and its anti-wave (true time-reversed replica wave). If the external observer could see the *detected*(effect) waves in a hidden wave pair, he or she would see the “wave” going in one direction and the anti-wave passing precisely through it in the other direction. However, prior to detection, the phase conjugate wave exists entirely in the complex plane and hence in the time domain.<sup>5</sup>

**Bearden, Thomas:** PhD, nuclear engineer, retired lieutenant colonel (U.S. Army), CEO, director of the Association of Distinguished American Scientists, and fellow emeritus of the Alpha Foundation’s Institute for Advanced Study. Bearden is a theoretical conceptualist active in the study of scalar electromagnetics, advanced electrodynamics, unified field theory, KGB energetics weapons and phenomena, free energy systems, electromagnetic healing via the unified field action of extended Sachs-Evans electrodynamics, and human development. Particularly known for his work establishing a theory of overunity electrical power systems, scalar electromagnetic weapons, energetics weapons, and the use of time-as-energy in both power systems and the mind-body interaction.<sup>6</sup>

**bioplasmic field:** Dr. Victor Inyushin at Kazakh University in Russia suggests the existence of a so-called bioplasmic energy field composed of ions, free protons, and free electrons. His observations showed that the bioplasmic particles are constantly renewed by chemical processes in the cells and are in constant motion. There appears to be a balance of positive and negative particles within the bioplasma that is relatively stable. In spite of the normal stability of the bioplasma, Inyushin has found that a significant amount of this energy is radiated into space. Clouds of bioplasmic particles that have broken away from the organism can be measured moving through the air.<sup>7</sup>

**Braun, Wernher von:** One of the preeminent rocket developers and champions of space exploration from the 1930s to the 1970s.<sup>8</sup>

**Broglie, Louis de:** French physicist and mathematician who was chiefly devoted to the study of the various extensions of wave mechanics: Dirac's electron theory, the new theory of light, the general theory of spin particles, applications of wave mechanics to nuclear physics, etc. He published numerous notes and several papers on this subject and is the author of more than twenty-five books on the fields of his particular interests. In 1929 the Swedish Academy of Sciences conferred on him the Nobel Prize for Physics "for his discovery of the wave nature of electrons,"

published originally in 1924 as his doctoral thesis, *Recherches sur la théorie des quanta* (*Research on Quantum Theory*). In his later career, de Broglie worked to develop a causal explanation of wave mechanics in opposition to the purely probabilistic interpretation of Born, Bohr, and Heisenberg, which now dominates quantum mechanical theory. De Broglie also made major contributions to the fostering of international scientific cooperation.<sup>9</sup> *See also* Dirac sea.

**calibrate:** A way of noticing patterns of energy and information and assigning some form of real-time measurement to that experience. Measuring pre- and post-changes after a Two-Point is one very useful form of calibrating a measurement in Matrix Energetics.

**carrier wave:** A fundamental wave that is modulated by another wave or other waves and "carries" the other modulating waveform(s). Stripping the carrier in a demodulator will reveal the carried waveform(s).<sup>10</sup>

**Casimir effect:** Widely cited as evidence that underlying the universe is a sea of real zero-point energy. In 1947 physicist Hendrik Casimir had the opportunity to discuss ideas with Niels Bohr on a walk. According to Casimir, Bohr "mumbled something about zero-point energy" being relevant. This led Casimir to an analysis of zero-point energy effects in the related problem of forces between perfectly conducting parallel plates.<sup>11</sup> *See also* zero-point energy.

**closed system:** In the present approach, a system that in theory does not communicate with its environment and does not exchange energy or matter between system and environment. There is really no such thing as a truly closed system in the universe since every system is embedded in the active

vacuum and is an open system in energy exchange with the vacuum.<sup>12</sup> *See also* open system.

**coherence:** A correlation between the phases of two or more waves so that interference effects may be produced between them, or a correlation between the phases of parts of a single wave.<sup>13</sup> *See also* decoherence.

**collapse of the wave function:** Also called a state-vector collapse or wave-packet reduction, a wave function collapse is one of two processes by which quantum systems evolve in time, according to the laws of quantum mechanics. The concept was originally introduced by Werner Heisenberg in his uncertainty paper and later postulated by John von Neumann as a dynamical process independent of the Schrödinger equation.<sup>14</sup>

**complex conjugate number:** Extensions of real numbers, the complex conjugate of any real number has the same real component accompanied by a Greek  $\tau$  or  $i$ , which transforms the plane so that all points are reflected on the real axis—that is, points above and below the real axis are exchanged while points on the real axis remain the same (since the complex conjugate of a real number is itself).<sup>15</sup>

**decoherence:** A non-unitary process that describes a thermodynamically irreversible disturbance (change of state) of the environment by the system—rather than distortion of the system by its environment. This gives the *appearance* of wave function collapse when a system interacts with its environment, which prevents different elements in the quantum superposition of the system and environment's wave function from interfering with each other.<sup>16</sup> *See also* coherence.

**Dirac, Paul:** The importance of Dirac's work lies essentially in his famous wave equation, which injected special relativity into Schrödinger's equation. Taking into account the fact that, mathematically speaking, relativity theory and quantum theory are not only distinct from each other but also oppose each other, Dirac's work could be considered a fruitful reconciliation between the two theories.<sup>17</sup>

**Dirac sea:** A theoretical model of an infinite sea of negatively energized particles in a vacuum. Erwin Schrödinger is said to have been the first to

note that solving the Dirac equation for the motion of the electron resulted in a necessary component that could be interpreted as random, speed-of-light fluctuations of a point-like particle.

He dubbed this motion *zitterbewegung*, German for “jitter motion.” The positron, the antimatter counterpart of the electron, was originally conceived of as a hole in the Dirac sea, well before its experimental discovery in 1932. Dirac, Einstein, and others recognized that it is related to the aether.<sup>18</sup> *See also* electron; Schrödinger, Erwin.

**double-slit experiment:** The experiment that demonstrates the concept in quantum mechanics that energy-carrying waves can also behave like particles and that particles can also display a wave aspect—just not at the same time. A light source illuminates a thin plate with two parallel slits cut in it, and the light passing through the slits strikes a screen behind them. The wave nature of light causes the light waves passing through the slits to interfere with one another, creating a pattern of bright and dark bands on the screen. The screen, however, absorbs the light as discrete particles called photons.

**drop down:** Most people in our society could be said to be centered in their heads, entertaining the mistaken belief that this is where consciousness arises. In the prevailing Western scientific model, the human brain is thought to generate the process of consciousness, and the brain and mind are considered to be inseparable, if not one and the same. However, there is a different form of consciousness that could be called heart-centered awareness, or what Daniel Goleman refers to as “emotional intelligence.” This form of awareness is based on letting go of the distracting interplay of mental chatter and dropping down into the theta state (7–4 cycles per second). You can learn, as military remote viewers do, to consciously sustain this state and operate from within it. When you do this, you begin to consciously access the realm of the right brain, or the subconscious awareness. The state of dropping down is characterized by a particular awareness in which you notice but do not analyze or judge.

**electromagnetic energy:** From a vacuum and quantum mechanical viewpoint, a deterministic or coherent structuring, either dynamic or static,

existing in the virtual-photon or charged-particle flux. From a space-time viewpoint, a curvature of space-time or set of such curvatures.<sup>19</sup>

**electron:** A stable elementary particle in all atoms having—in “forward time”—a negative charge of  $1.602 \times 10^{19}$  coulombs, a spin  $1/2$ , and a mass of  $9.11 \times 10^{-31}$

kilograms. If time is reversed, the charge (but not the mass) of the electron is reversed and it becomes a positron. The “electron” may also exist as a negative energy, negative charge, or negative mass energy in the vacuum itself. In this state, the negative energy is the source of negative energy fields and negative energy potentials. The hole in the Dirac sea created by this positron can be manipulated in

“anti-circuits” to directly engineer local antigravity, quite strongly and practically.<sup>20</sup>

*See also* Dirac sea.

**electron cloud:** *See* probability cloud.

**energetic rapport:** Describes the process of being on the same wavelength as the person, place, thing, pattern, or expression of energy with whom you are relating.

Techniques that are beneficial in building rapport include matching your body language (e.g., posture and gesture), maintaining eye contact, and matching breathing rhythm. Some of these techniques are explored in neuro-linguistic programming. Energetic rapport is not accomplished through a mental process but by dropping down into heart-centered awareness and matching up with the feelings and imagery of the object, energy, or pattern you are attempting to synchronize with.

This form of rapport is facilitated by a process of noticing whatever it is you notice without judging or analyzing and then allowing yourself to be guided step by step by whatever occurs in the next moment. *See also* drop down.

**entropy:** In thermodynamics, a measure of disorder in a system that quantifies the amount of energy unavailable for useful work in a system undergoing change, such as the expansion of a gas in a vacuum or the heat transfer from a hot body into a cold body. These changes cause an increase in entropy for the system under consideration, but energy is not transferred into or out of the system. In other words, as entropy rises, the available energy of the system decreases. *See also* negentropy.

**ether:** *See* aether physics.

**Feynman, Richard:** An American physicist who was a key figure in “the development of the theory of quantum electrodynamics, laying the foundation for all other quantum field theories. His approach combined quantum mechanics and relativity theory and exploited a method using diagrams of particle interactions to greatly simplify calculations. For this work, he shared with American physicist Julian Schwinger and Japanese physicist Sin-Itiro Tomonaga the 1965 Nobel Prize for physics.”<sup>21</sup>

**focused intent:** Can be defined as the creative act of using the many and varied parts of your total conscious experience to define a set of new experiences, realities, or outcomes in your current experience. It is helpful to focus your imagination in order to create a new sensation. This will initiate a flow of subtle energy to directly or indirectly influence or manifest the desired events and effects, thus to create or focus with feeling. The reason for focusing your intent is to convince yourself that you can “move” into that new reality. Since every application of our intention is an act of creation, focused intent ultimately teaches us how to create efficiently and effectively. This in turn ultimately manifests in some type or types of events in our sensory world. The object of your focused intent is like the blueprint for manifestation. However, once the blueprint is conceived, you must then let go of it to the universe in order for the form to be given life. This is the alchemical process for manifestation.<sup>22</sup>

**Garcia, Hector:** Certified Master Practitioner of Matrix Energetics and founder of the Garcia Chiropractic Holistic Center in San Diego, California, where he uses his unique intuitive gift as a medical intuitive to detect physical, mental, emotional, psychological, psychic, and spiritual imbalances that show up in different energy systems of the body. Whether on a cellular

dimension or on the quantum level, Garcia is able to pinpoint the root cause of the problem, facilitate the body to release it energetically, and correct the issues. As a trained and skillful chiropractic diagnostician, he uses several techniques, such as Contact Reflex Analysis, a nutritional balance assessment; Neuro Emotional Technique, an emotional release therapy; Allergy Elimination Technique, a method that removes sensitivities to allergens; and the Yuen Method of Chinese energetic medicine (of which he is an instructor), an energetic healing technique that can detect any imbalances or deficiencies affecting the body and its capacity to heal itself.<sup>23</sup>

**general theory of relativity:** Einstein's theory of gravity, in which the gravitational force is represented by a curvature in space-time and in which space-time is an active entity. We may look at all forces as being due to curvatures of space-time interacting with mass.<sup>24</sup> *See also* special relativity model.

**graviton:** In the quantum theory of gravitation, the graviton is the quantum of the gravitational field. It is massless. In the new theory, we may take the graviton as a coupled scalar and longitudinal photon pair.<sup>25</sup>

**Hamilton, William Rowan:** An Irish physicist, astronomer, and mathematician who made important contributions to classical mechanics, optics, and algebra. His studies of mechanical and optical systems led him to discover far-reaching mathematical concepts and techniques.<sup>26</sup>

**heart field:** "The heart is the most powerful generator of electromagnetic energy in the human body, producing the largest rhythmic electromagnetic field of any of the body's organs. The heart's electrical field is about sixty times greater in amplitude than the electrical activity generated by the brain. This field, measured in the form of an electrocardiogram (ECG), can be detected anywhere on the surface of the body.

Furthermore, the magnetic field produced by the heart is more than five thousand times greater in strength than the field generated by the brain, and can be detected a number of feet away from the body, in all directions, using SQUID-based magnetometers (superconducting quantum interference devices that measure extremely small magnetic fields)."<sup>27</sup> Matrix

Energetics teaches that through the heart field you have access to the zero-point energy field, the unlimited potential energy of the universe. *See also* right brain; zero-point energy field.

**Heaviside,**

**Oliver:**

Noted

English

self-taught

physicist

and

brilliant

electrodynamicist who played a role in discarding Maxwell's quaternions and also in forming vector mathematics and formulating the vector reduction of Maxwell's theory from twenty quaternion equations in some twenty unknowns to the present four vector equations.<sup>28</sup>

**Heisenberg, Werner:** German physicist whose cat thought experiment theory and its applications resulted especially in the discovery of allotropic forms of hydrogen.

Heisenberg was awarded the Nobel Prize for physics in 1932. His theory is based only on what can be observed—that is, on the radiation emitted by the atom. We cannot always assign to an electron a position in space at a given time, nor follow it in its orbit, and we cannot assume that the planetary orbits postulated by Niels Bohr actually exist. Mechanical quantities, such as position or velocity, should be represented not by ordinary numbers but by abstract mathematical structures called

“matrices,” and he formulated his new theory in terms of matrix equations. Later, Heisenberg stated his famous principle of uncertainty, that the

determination of the position and momentum of a mobile particle necessarily contains errors the product of which cannot be less than the quantum constant  $h$  and that, although these errors are negligible on the human scale, they cannot be ignored in studies of the atom.<sup>29</sup>

**Herbert, Nick:** A PhD in experimental physics, Herbert was senior scientist at Memorex and other Bay Area hardware companies specializing in magnetic, electrostatic, optical, and thermal methods of information processing and storage.

He is the author of *Quantum Reality: Beyond the New Physics, Faster Than Light* (published in Japan under the title *Time Machine Construction Manual*) and *Elemental Mind: Human Consciousness and the New Physics*. Herbert devised the shortest proof of Bell's interconnectedness theorem to date. He has written on faster-than-light and quantum theory for such journals as the *American Journal of Physics* and *New Scientist* and is a columnist for *Mondo 2000*.<sup>30</sup>

**hologram:** "One of the things that makes holography possible is a phenomenon known as interference. Interference is the crisscrossing pattern that occurs when two or more waves, such as waves of water, ripple through each other. Once they've collided, each wave contains information, in the form of energy coding, about the other, including all the other information it contains. Interference patterns amount to a constant accumulation of information, and waves have a virtually infinite capacity for storage. When a complex series of interference patterns interact, they form a hybrid of highly structured information, which is the building block of what we perceive as our reality constructs. If you drop a pebble into a pond, it will produce a series of concentric waves that expands outward. If you drop two pebbles into a pond, you will get two sets of waves that expand and pass through one another. The complex arrangement of crests and troughs that results from such collisions is known as an interference pattern." The snapshot of the pond's surface is similar to a holographic image in that it consists of a set of interference patterns produced by the combining of the various wave fronts. Neurosurgeon Karl Pribram realized that if the holographic brain model was taken to its logical conclusions, it opened the door on the possibility that objective reality—the world of coffee cups,

mountain vistas, elm trees, and table lamps—might not even exist, or at least not exist in the way we believe it does.<sup>31</sup>

**imaginary unit (number):** In mathematics, physics, and engineering, the imaginary unit is the square root of negative one. Denoted by the letter  $i$  or the Latin  $j$  or the Greek  $\tau$ , the unit allows the real number system to be extended to the complex number system.

**inertial frames:** If two systems are moving uniformly in relation to each other, one cannot determine anything about their motion except that it is relative. Each of the two frames is said to be “rotated” with respect to the other, but not accelerating. The velocity of light in space (the vacuum) is constant and independent of the velocity of its source and the velocity of an observer. All the laws of physics are the same in all inertial frames of reference.<sup>32</sup>

**innocent perception:** A cultivated practice of allowing perception to be the gathering arm of consciousness so it may stretch beyond our former reach. The ongoing search for consciousness directs all our perceptions. We actually *see* with our total consciousness, not our eyes, which are only data-gathering instruments.<sup>33</sup>

**least-action pathway:** Least-action paths are the routes we observe in everyday life.

They are also literally the pathways for neural information in our brains and nervous systems. By becoming conscious of the world around us, we create these pathways.

They become habits necessary for our survival. At a quantum level, the action of the path can change depending upon the observer of that path. Each observation creates a least-action connection with the previous observation. By choosing to observe reality along a particular path, what was unobserved then becomes a greater-action path, even if it would have been a least-action path if it had been observed. In other words, by choosing to observe a particular path over others, a least action is created.

Consciousness creates, from all the paths, the one that takes the least action.<sup>34</sup>

**left brain:** In each second, consciousness reveals to us a tiny fraction of the eleven million bits of information our senses pass on to our brains. While the right brain functions along with the left and can process billions of bits of data per second, the left brain is a serial processor that can only handle seven, plus or minus two, bits of information per second. In this way, the left brain, the namer and classifier, functions as the analytical sensor, determining what sensory data is allowed to be perceived consciously and what gets pushed below the threshold of the conscious awareness. This is useful to navigate in the so-called real world. However, because the left brain censors what is allowed and what is disavowed in our sensory awareness, massive amounts of data are continually deleted and considered negligible by the left brain's innate programming. As soon as you name something, you have defined it. In defining it, you have dictated how it shows up in your reality.

This is why the Norwegian scientist Tor Nørretranders says, “Trust your hunches and intuitions—they are closer to reality than your perceived reality, as they are based on far more information.”<sup>35</sup> *See also* letting go; right brain.

**letting go:** The left brain (analytical mind) has been known as the “monkey” mind.

The way to trap a monkey in the jungle is to set out a box with a piece of fruit in it with a hole in the box that is only large enough for the monkey's empty hand to enter. When the monkey grabs the fruit in the box, it cannot get its hand out of the box without first letting go of the fruit. But a majority of monkeys never let go, which makes them easy catches for the hunters who lay such traps. This analogy characterizes the behavior of the left-brained individual. Once you decide what the rules are and how they should show up, you can spend your whole life holding on to the fruit of your ideas and never let go in order to experience a larger and more expansive sense of reality. In Matrix Energetics, students are taught how to drop their awareness out of their head, out of a concerned and judgmental mind-set, and into the field of the heart. The field of the heart links naturally with the

domain of the right brain and its emotional intelligence. It is from this latter domain of consciousness, the field of dreams, as it were, that the greatest ideas and creative concepts have been conceptualized and realized. This is what Matrix Energetics means by “letting go.” By letting go of the need to understand your experiences, particularly if they fall outside your perceptual box, you can begin to trust the feeling-oriented state of heart-based awareness.

**many-worlds theory:** The fundamental idea of the many-worlds theory was proposed by physicist Hugh Everett in 1957: that there are myriads of worlds in the universe in addition to the world we are aware of. In particular, every time a quantum experiment with different outcomes with non-zero probability is performed, all outcomes are obtained, each in a different world, even if we are aware only of the world with the outcome we have seen. In Matrix Energetics, quantum experiments take place everywhere and very often, not just in physics laboratories; even the irregular blinking of an old fluorescent bulb is a quantum experiment.<sup>36</sup>  
*See also* parallel universe

**Matrix Energetics:** The art and science of transformation.

**Maxwell, James Clerk:** Scottish mathematician and theoretical physicist whose most significant achievement was the development of the classical electromagnetic theory, synthesizing all previous unrelated observations, experiments, and equations of electricity, magnetism, and optics into a consistent theory. His set of famous equations demonstrated that electricity, magnetism, and light are all manifestations of the electromagnetic field. From that moment on, all other classical laws or equations of these disciplines became simplified cases of Maxwell’s equations. Ivan Tolstoy, in his biography of Maxwell, wrote, “Maxwell’s importance in the history of scientific thought is comparable to Einstein’s (whom he inspired) and to Newton’s (whose influence he curtailed).”<sup>37</sup>

**Maxwell’s electrodynamics (electromagnetic theory):** Simply put, Maxwell’s theory of electrodynamics consists of his equations. His fundamental theory consisted of some twenty quaternion equations in twenty unknowns, appearing in his 1865 paper. After Maxwell’s death and some curtailment by Maxwell himself, Oliver Heaviside modified and

sharply curtailed these equations into the familiar four equations of today, as did Willard Gibbs and Heinrich Hertz. Hendrik Lorentz further curtailed the Maxwell-Heaviside equations by symmetrically regauging them. This simplified their mathematical solution but it also inadvertently and arbitrarily discarded all open Maxwell systems far from thermodynamic equilibrium with their active environment (such as the modern active vacuum).<sup>38</sup>

**Maxwell's unified field theory:** The term is usually applied with respect to any physical or electromagnetic system whose electrodynamic operations obey Maxwell's electrostatics model after the Lorentz regauging of the Maxwell-Heaviside equations. This subset is now unfortunately and inappropriately referred to as "Maxwell's equations." As a result, many scientists and most engineers today no longer understand Maxwell's theory. When embedded in a higher-topology algebra, the theory permits a vast richness of additional electromagnetic systems and behaviors, including full unified field theory operations. In standard gauge symmetry electrostatics, all these higher-symmetry functions and systems are excluded a priori. From Thomas Bearden's view, this is particularly sad since these arbitrary reductions of Maxwell's theory exclude all electromagnetic systems far from equilibrium in their exchange with the active vacuum. Hence, almost all scientists and engineers believe it is against the very laws of nature to propose an electrical power system that produces more energy output—and more work in the load—than the energy input made by the operator himself.<sup>39</sup> *See also* Heaviside, Oliver.

**McMoneagle, Joe:** American remote viewer, No. 001 (372), who has provided paranormal support to the Central Intelligence Agency, Defense Intelligence Agency, National Security Agency, Drug Enforcement Agency, Secret Service, Federal Bureau of Investigation, United States Customs, National Security Council, and Department of Defense. He was one of the original officers recruited for the top-secret army program now known as the Stargate Project.<sup>40</sup>

**module:** A module is a self-contained component of a system that has a well-defined interface to other components of the system. In essence, Matrix Energetics developed an interdimensional technology that holds a

space from the zero-point field and creates a conceptual bridge point from the imaginary to the real.

This describes, by the way, a complex conjugate number in quantum physics, where minus one represents the imaginary quality, and then there is the real number, or quality, as well. When you multiply the two together, the imaginary component cancels out, and you end up with a real vector or coordinate in space-time. This is exactly how this energetic technology works; it is a spiritual technology that it is engineerable and reproducible. Think of a module as creative, interactive spiritual software designed to perform or address or correct a given task, condition, or activity. A module in this sense could be said to perform the function of what Dr.

William Tiller calls an intention-imprinted device. *See also* complex conjugate number; imaginary unit; Tiller, William.

**morphic field:** A field within and around a morphic unit, which organizes the field's characteristic structure and pattern of activity at all levels of complexity. The term *morphic field* includes morphogenetic, behavioral, social, cultural, and mental fields. Morphic fields are shaped and stabilized by morphic resonance from previous similar morphic units, which were under the influence of fields of the same kind.

They consequently contain a kind of cumulative memory and tend to become increasingly habitual.<sup>41</sup>

**morphic resonance:** Coined by Rupert Sheldrake in his 1981 book *A New Science of Life*, resonance on a morphic level is “the influence of previous structures of activity on subsequent similar structures of activity organized by morphic fields.

Through morphic resonance, formative causal influences pass through or across both space and time, and these influences are assumed not to fall off with distance in space or time, but to come only from the past. The greater the degree of similarity, the greater the influence of morphic resonance.” The expression of resonance, therefore, refers to what Sheldrake thinks is “the basis of memory in nature . . . the idea of mysterious telepathy-type

interconnections between organisms and of collective memories within species.”<sup>42</sup>

**morphic unit:** A unit of form or organization, such as an atom, molecule, crystal, cell, plant, animal, pattern of instinctive behavior, social group, element of culture, ecosystem, planet, planetary system, or galaxy. Morphic units are organized in nested hierarchies of units within units: a crystal, for example, contains molecules, which contain atoms, which contain electrons and nuclei, which contain nuclear particles, which contain quarks.<sup>43</sup>

**motionless electromagnetic generator (MEG):** The transformer-like electrical power generator, invented by Thomas Bearden, James Kenny, James Hayes, Kenneth Moore, and Stephen Patrick, that powers the transformer core with a permanent magnet but separates curled magnetic vector potential from uncurled magnetic vector potential so that the magnetic field flux is retained in the core while the potential is replenished outside the core and adjacent to it.<sup>44</sup>

**negative time:** In quantum mechanics, each virtual photon is continually turning into an electron/positron pair, and vice versa. Paul Dirac proposed that a positron is an electron traveling backward in time. Further, pair production produces time-smeared particles—an electron and a positron. Pair production, then, actually produces two electrons: one coupled to (smeared in) a positive piece of time and one coupled to (smeared in) a negative piece of time. Thus, in the vacuum, two discrete streams of time, one positive and one negative, are continually created in conjunction with pair production and destroyed by pair annihilation. Further, integration of tiny virtual pieces of time (from virtual photons) to form “passage of time” macroscopically is directly associated with the charge (the absorption and emission of virtual particles) of an observable particle. This is what is meant by an object “existing” (persisting). Its continual virtual-photon interactions are integrated by its mass (timeless) part in comparatively larger jumps through time. The absorption of the photon connects a positive piece of time to the mass of the particle, converting it to mass time. The subsequent emission of an observable photon, “tears of the little time-tail,” so to speak, leaves behind a totally spatial mass entity, having no large connection to “the flow of time.”<sup>45</sup>

**negentropy (negative entropy):** In a sense, the reversal of disorder, or reversal of entropy. In a negentropic system, energy would proceed from a state of disorder to increasing order. In a biological system, such as a human body, this would describe the principle of a self-organizing system.<sup>46</sup> *See also* entropy.

**Neumann, John von:** Hungarian-American mathematician who developed the branch of mathematics known as game theory. In 1933 he joined the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, New Jersey, and later served as a consultant on the Los Alamos atomic-bomb project during World War II. In 1955 he became a member of the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission. Von Neumann is noted for his fundamental contributions to the theory of quantum mechanics, particularly the concept of “rings of operators” (now known as Neumann algebras), and for his pioneering work in applied mathematics, mainly in statistics and numerical analysis.

He is also known for the design of high-speed electronic computers.<sup>47</sup>

**Newtonian physics (Newton’s laws of motion):** From Sir Isaac Newton’s *Philosophiæ Naturalis Principia Mathematica*, the three physical laws that form the basis for classical mechanics. Newton used them to explain and investigate the motion of physical objects and systems, including the motion of earthbound objects and planetary motion. *First law:* Often referred to as the law of inertia, a body will persist in a state of rest or uniform motion unless acted upon by an external unbalanced force. *Second law:* Observed from an inertial reference frame, force equals mass times acceleration. *Third law:* To every action there is an equal and opposite reaction.

**not doing:** To try to understand is a matter of *doing*. Clearly, it is easier to explain *doing*. It seems to be akin to objectivity; a rock is a rock because of doing—“because of all the things you know how to do to it.” It is important that without doing, nothing is familiar. If nothing is familiar, everything is new and unknown and experienced for the first time—it is unconditioned. When you try “to figure it out, all you’re really doing is trying to make the world familiar.” This is doing and involves rational activity—specifically rational or intellectual formulation of experience. Acting without belief is *not doing*. Belief, again, orders experience in an attempt to make it

meaningful. The technique of *not doing* is facilitated by displacement of normal doing by a different doing in a trick analogous to learning an alternative world description. In the same way, both worlds—the world we all know and the sorcerer’s world—are unreal, but they are useful, even if not necessary models of reality.<sup>48</sup> In Matrix Energetics, it is taught that whatever you are doing, you are doing it with your perceptual model of how things get done. In other words, whenever you enter into the state of doing something, you are working off your previous assumptions about how the world works and how things are. When you suspend these judgments and merely perceive an act in the moment, you are entering into the realm of grace, which is characterized by the art of not doing. An old and perhaps trite corollary of this is to “let go and let God.” Every act of doing is performed by the doer, the left-brain mentality. We believe that what we do makes a difference, yet how easily are our plans and our schemes undone by life’s circumstances? The illusion of control over the energy patterns of the universe is just that. When we humbly acknowledge, even as Jesus did, that “I of my own self can do nothing,” we are now seated in the throne of the heart’s domain, having surrendered our human conceptions concerning what is possible or impossible. Now things are done through us, not by us. Ultimately, the act of not doing is a simple act of faith that there is a higher power that, given the opportunity, can and does act through us.

**noticing:** In Matrix Energetics, noticing is the art of paying attention to what shows up in the moment by forming the habit of asking the open-ended question, “What am I noticing now?” You begin to train the unconscious mind to allow more information in from the domain of right-brain awareness to consciously held awareness. By doing this consistently, you begin to train yourself to become aware of energy and information that support your newfound dictate to pay attention to new stimuli and patterns in your environment (both internal and external). A corollary to this is to notice what is different, not the same. When consistently done, this trains the brain to look for new patterns and behaviors and reinforces any beneficial changes.

**observational frame of reference:** A spatial, organized, measured lattice placed in

“emptiness” (space, space-time). Normally refers to a three-dimensional spatial frame. All objects and points in the “universe” or spatial frame are considered to simultaneously coexist at separate, measured points in the frame. Differs from the vacuum in that, rigorously, vacuum has no existing definite lengths and no existing definite time intervals, as these appear only after measurement or detection and are relative to the observer and to the interactions ongoing as well as in the detection process itself. The “laboratory frame” is the static reference frame of the observer or measurement. A separate reference frame may be assumed to exist for any fixed or moving object, or centered on any point in another frame. When a type of frame is assumed, the entire class of physical interactions that can occur has been restricted to an assumed set or type. In other words, given the frame, the *conventional* physics has been assumed. One of the greatest restrictions of an assumed “frame” is to rule out the consideration (existence) of other higher dimensions. Note that in the new unified field theory approach, the other higher dimensions are always available and cannot be ruled out in general, but only in some special cases. Every curvature of space-time, and any internal additional curvature to that primary curvature, adds a new dimension. In our view, a space-time may be “flat” in overall curvature but consist of internally structured deterministic curvatures or “engines.” In this view, normal inertial frames, for example, may still contain vacuum engines, which will not affect the normal bulk translation rules but may affect any or all the non-translation mechanisms, including the very laws of nature in many cases.<sup>49</sup>

**observer effect:** The changes that the act of observation will make on the phenomenon being observed. This is often the result of instruments that, by necessity, alter the state of what they measure in some manner. This effect can be observed in many domains of classical and quantum physics.

**open system:** A system that communicates with its environment and exchanges energy and/or matter with its environment. With the possible exception of a few theoretical or hypothetical systems, all systems in the universe are, in fact, open systems. An open system may be in equilibrium with its active environment so that it cannot accept, store, and utilize any excess energy from the environment.<sup>50</sup> *See also* closed system.

**Oscilloclast:** *See* path-Oscilloclast.

**paired spin:** The intrinsic angular momentum of a particle, such as an electron, proton, neutron, photon, or graviton, for example—even when at rest, as if it were a top spinning about an axis but had to spin 720 degrees before it turned “full circle.”

Spin is quantized, and always described, as a half or whole spin (- 1, - 1/2, 0, 1/2, 1, and so on). A spinning charged particle, such as an electron, thus demonstrates a magnetic moment, due to the circulation of charge in the spinning. In the nucleus of an atom, the spin of the nucleus is the resultant of the spins of the nucleons (particles comprising the nucleus). Spin of particles would appear to be more like an

“implosion” to “explosion” circulation. In other words, the particle circulates in the time domain (complex plane) as well. It would appear that the spin of a particle is the basic feature that integrates the (disintegrated) flux energy of vacuum flux into observable charge. Apparently, all observable fields, matter, effects, and so forth depend upon this basic mechanism to zip together virtual entities and form observable phenomena.<sup>51</sup>

**parallel processing:** The ability of the brain to simultaneously, seamlessly process incoming stimuli for quick, decisive action.

**parallel universe:** Parallel universes are self-contained, whole universes, infinite in number, and exactly the same as the one next to them except for one change.

Moving across the infinite number of them, of course, you can get to any change you might want. These universes are all related to ours; indeed, they branch off from ours, and our universe is branched off from others. Within these parallel universes, our wars have had different outcomes from the ones we know. Species that are extinct in our universe have evolved and adapted in others. In other universes, we humans may have become extinct. A specific group of parallel universes is called a multiverse.<sup>52</sup> *See also* many-worlds theory.

**particle physics:** The branch of physics using accelerators to study high-energy particle collisions that determine the properties of atomic nuclei and other elementary particles.<sup>53</sup>

**path-Oscilloclast:** The instrument that Dr. Albert Abrams invented for the treatment of disease. The word means “vibration breaker.” After being attached to a power source, the device is connected to the patient’s body. By means of its rheostat, various vibratory rates may be produced. If a patient is suffering from tuberculosis, the Oscilloclast is set to emit a vibratory rate into the body corresponding to the rate that the disease has already created in the system. The patient feels no sensation because the vibrations are smaller than what human sense may detect.<sup>54</sup>

**phase-conjugate:** In nonlinear optics, the novel nonlinear mixing of waves that generate an output wave—called the phase-conjugate replica or time-reversed replica—that precisely retraces the path previously taken by the input wave that stimulated the action.<sup>55</sup>

**possibility waves:** Although observation is evidently necessary to bring about the transition from possible to actual, the fundamental nature of observation in quantum theory remains somewhat mysterious. This problem of measurement derives from the fact that prior to observation, the quantum is described as being a nonlocal wave of probability spread throughout space, while after observation, only one of the possible values is actualized. Thus, observation involves a discontinuous collapse, also called a “projection,” of the quantum wave function from a continuum of possibilities to a single actualized value. This projection, however, is an ad hoc element of the formalism, and is not a lawful transformation that is governed by Erwin Schrödinger’s wave equation. There is no explanation for how, when, or where this mysterious projection happens. Moreover, when the projection takes place, the laws of quantum physics do not predict which of the possible values will be actualized in any given observation, thus violating classical determinism and introducing an element of acausality and spontaneity into the theory at a fundamental level.<sup>56</sup> *See also* observer effect.

**probability cloud:** A term coined by physicist Richard Feynman in his discussion on “exactly what is an electron?” The electron cloud is often

referred to as an orbital because the space where an electron is likely to be found cannot be actually pinpointed. The model provides a simplified way of visualizing an electron as a solution of Erwin Schrödinger's paradoxical thought experiment that demonstrated the randomness of a cat's life or death in a concealed box. In the electron cloud analogy, the probability density, or the distribution of electrons, is described as a small cloud moving around the atomic or molecular nucleus, with the opacity of the cloud proportional to the probability density.<sup>57</sup> *See also* Feynman, Richard; Schrödinger, Erwin.

**psychotronics:** The science of mind-body-environment relationships, an interdisciplinary methodology concerned with the interactions of matter, energy, and consciousness.<sup>58</sup> *See also* Abrams, Albert; radionics.

**quantum field theory:** A quantum mechanical theory in which a physical field is considered a collection of particles and forces. Observable properties of an interacting system are expressed as finite quantities rather than vectors.<sup>59</sup>

**quantum/information potential:** A special potential added to the Schrödinger equation by David Bohm in his hidden-variable theory of quantum mechanics. The quantum potential is a multiple connected entity, so it "occupies" widely separated but connected points, events, or objects. It is also an extraordinary energy amplifier, since any energy input to one of the multiple connected points simultaneously and instantly appears in every other connected point, regardless of distance or location in the universe. In real life, the quantum potential also has a "coefficient of multiple connectivity" so that only a fraction of the energy input to one multiple connected point will appear in the other points of the multiple connection group. The quantum potential has been strongly weaponized by five nations, and quantum potential weapons are the dominant weapons on earth, being more powerful than nuclear weapons. In theory, the quantum potential together with engines and anti-engines could be used to treat and cure a given disease in all persons on earth simultaneously. Sadly, engines have been developed to generate diseases in a targeted populace, rather than heal the populace. Russia and Brazil have had the quantum potential

weapon for some time, as have two nations friendly to the United States. In 2001 China also deployed the quantum potential weapon.<sup>60</sup>

**quaternion algebra:** The algebra of quaternions and their mathematical operations.

Quaternion algebra is of higher topology than either vector or tensor algebra. James Maxwell's original 1865 equations are some twenty equations in twenty unknowns, in quaternion and quaternion-like algebra. Oliver Heaviside and others reduced the algebra to vector algebra and some four equations. Maxwell himself was rewriting the equations in his treatise to purge the quaternions because of the controversy over the difficult quaternion form. The present vector equations taught in university as

“Maxwell's equations” are, in fact, Heaviside's truncation of the Maxwell theory.

Going to tensor algebra electrodynamics does not recover the full range of Maxwell's original 1865 quaternion electromagnetic theory.<sup>61</sup> *See also* Heaviside, Oliver; Maxwell, James Clark.

**quaternion expression:** Composed of the sum of four terms, one of which is real and three of which contain imaginary units, where the terms can be written as the sum of a scalar and a three-dimensional vector.<sup>62</sup>

**radionics:** A method of diagnosis and treatment at a distance that utilizes specially designed instruments with which practitioners can determine the underlying causes of diseases within living systems, be they human, animal, plant, or the soil itself.

While radionics is mainly used to diagnose and treat human ailments, it has also been used in agriculture to increase yields, control pests, and enhance the health of livestock. *See also* psychotronics.

**reference frame:** Your set of rules for noticing what you notice; your construct for how things show up. The frame is the context through which you consider a situation—the frame of reference. The frame is incredibly powerful. Frames are generally unconscious filters for a situation. Because

they're often unspoken and unrecognized, they can bypass our critical faculties and go straight into the unconscious. Every decision we make, the very way we see things as part of our decision-making process, is part of our unconscious frame of reference. Over time, we build up a set of rules around how to view and deal with a given type of situation. In order to deal with a given situation or to conceptualize a particular problem, we apply this preexisting software or these reference frames to see how any given situation or occurrence fits our perceptual model. This is largely done at an unconscious level. Accessing altered states of consciousness and then looking at familiar situations or patterns through a new perceptual lens can modify old reference frames or create new ones. Don Juan, Carlos Castaneda's teacher, might refer to this as the difference between "looking"—perceiving through the old frame of reference—and "seeing"—observing free from the usually distorted lens of our perceptual bias or habitual frame of reference.

**renormalization:** The procedure in quantum field theory by which divergent parts of a calculation, leading to nonsensical infinite results, are absorbed by redefinition into a few measurable quantities, so yielding finite answers.<sup>63</sup>

**right brain:** The right brain is a parallel processor that functions in a nonverbal manner and excels in visual, spatial, perceptual, and intuitive information, excelling with complexity, ambiguity, and paradox. Much faster than the left brain, the right brain processes information quickly in a nonlinear and nonsequential way, looking at the whole picture and billions of bits of information per second, and then determining the spatial relationships of all the parts as they relate to the whole. This component of the brain is not concerned with things falling into patterns because of prescribed rules. In Matrix Energetics, the right brain is conceptually linked to the person's heart field. This partnership of right hemisphere and heart, when properly developed, gives you the ability to access altered states of consciousness and unique perceptual frames of reference. *See also* heart field; left brain.

**rule:** A statement that tells observers how to render particular elements or aspects of a specific pattern of energy or experience. Your individual rule,

or rule set, determines how the box of your virtual reality is constructed. Some possibly useful elements to include in your rule set are (1) a neutral point of view, (2) objectively verifiable means, and (3) a flexibility of viewpoint and its application. Bruce Lee elucidated three simple rules that governed the philosophy of the martial art called Jeet Kune Do, “the way of the intercepting (open) fist.” His rule set had three principles: absorb what is useful, discard the classical mess (question habitual ways of thinking and acting that can lead to mechanical responses rather than creative spontaneity), and no way as way (which in Matrix Energetics means to stay neutral and flexible, notice what is different not the same, and act from your heart, not from the dictates of your head).<sup>64</sup>

**Saint Germain:** The Ascended Master Saint Germain teaches that the highest alchemy is the transformation of one’s human consciousness into the divinity of the Higher Self. He stands ready to assist all souls in this endeavor. He has also said he would release the technology of the Aquarian age when the nations shall have put behind them the destructive uses of science and religion to accept the challenge that lies at the heart of both, which is for man to enter his heart and the nucleus of the atom and to harness from both the unlimited spiritual and physical resources to establish the golden age.<sup>65</sup>

**scalar electromagnetics:** Colloquial term for the electrodynamics that arise from considering transverse electromagnetic waves, longitudinal electromagnetic waves, time-polarized electromagnetic waves, electro-gravitation, superluminal (faster than the speed of light) signals, interferometry, nonlinear optical functions, time-as-energy, and the infolded electrodynamics inside all usual electromagnetic fields, waves, and potentials. In secret superweapon projects, the Russian term for scalar electrodynamics is *energetics*.<sup>66</sup>

**scalar wave:** Characterized by magnitude only. With respect to polarization, however, a scalar photon is a term in use for a time-polarized photon, where the electromagnetic energy oscillates along the time axis. The effects are observed as an oscillation in the rate of flow of time, hence a “time-density” oscillation. The term

“scalar” with respect to polarization implies only that there is no vector component in three-dimensional space, even though a vector (and a variation of its magnitude) exists along the time axis. The effects are observed as an oscillation in the rate of flow of time, hence a “time-density” oscillation.<sup>67</sup>

**Schrödinger, Erwin:** A highly gifted German physicist with a broad education.

After studying chemistry, he devoted himself for years to Italian painting. After this he took up botany, resulting in a series of papers on plant phylogeny. His great discovery, Schrödinger’s wave equation, was made at the end of this epoch, during the first half of 1926. It came as a result of his dissatisfaction with the quantum condition in Niels Bohr’s orbit theory and his belief that atomic spectra should really be determined by some kind of eigenvalue problem. For this work he shared with Paul Dirac the Nobel Prize in Physics in 1933.<sup>68</sup> *See also* Dirac, Paul.

**second attention:** First attention can be called the “knowing mind” and second attention can be called the “not knowing” or “unknowing mind.” Second attention can be cultivated by relaxing the search for meaning. This can be experienced by relaxing the tendency to project and/or assume meaning onto whatever is perceived, in lieu of direct perception of the phenomena. This can also occur by dropping labels through an agreement to experience the world without naming what you are experiencing.<sup>69</sup>

**serial processing:** Processing that occurs sequentially. There is an explicit order in which operations occur, and the results of one action are generally known before a next action is considered.<sup>70</sup>

**Sheldrake, Rupert:** One of the world’s most innovative developmental biologists, Sheldrake is best known for his theory of morphic fields and morphic resonance, which leads to a vision of a living, developing universe with its own inherent memory: “Over the course of fifteen years of research on plant development, I came to the conclusion that for understanding the development of plants, their morphogenesis, genes, and gene products are not enough. Morphogenesis also depends on organizing fields. The same arguments apply to the development of animals. Since the 1920s, many

developmental biologists have proposed that biological organization depends on fields, variously called biological fields, or developmental fields, or positional fields, or morphogenetic fields.”71

**special relativity model:** (1) The laws of physics are the same for all observers in uniform motion relative to one another (Galileo’s principle of relativity), and (2) The speed of light in a vacuum is the same for all observers, regardless of their relative motion or of the motion of the source of the light.

**spinor field:** See torsion field.

**super-coherent:** More than a usual degree of coherence between the phases or two or more waves, so the interface effects may be produced between them, or a correlation between the phases or parts of a single wave.72

**superposition:** The simple linear addition and subtraction of two or more values, states, and so on. One of the key principles in field theories and in the concept of potentials. When the situation is sufficiently nonlinear, however, interaction of waves and potentials occurs instead of simple superposition.73

**Tiller, William:** Scientist and author, featured in the film *What the Bleep Do We Know?!*, fellow to the American Academy for the Advancement of Science, professor emeritus of Stanford University’s Department of Materials Science, he spent thirty-four years in academia after nine years as an advisory physicist with the Westinghouse Research Laboratories. He has published more than 250 conventional scientific papers, three books, and several patents. In parallel, for more than thirty years, he has been avocationally pursuing serious experimental and theoretical study of the field of psychoenergetics, which will very likely become an integral part of “tomorrow’s” physics. In this new area, he has published an additional one hundred scientific papers and four seminal books.74

**time reverse:** For electromagnetic waves, the process of forming a phase-conjugate wave. For a particle or a mass, the process of pumping the particle or mass with time-polarized electromagnetic waves so that the

resident space-time curvature engine in the mass is amplified and phase-conjugated, forming a precise, amplified anti-engine, which then slowly time-reverses the mass back to a previous condition and state. We accent that *time-reversing a single object or single group of objects* is not the same thing as the “traveling into the past” so popularized by science fiction.

For time travel to the past, the entire universe and everything in it except the traveler would have to be time-reversed. That would not seem possible by any stretch of the imagination today! On the other hand, time-reversal of a single thing, such as a particle or a wave—or even a group of things, such as a group of particles or waves—is not only feasible but readily achievable. A hole in a Dirac sea is a negative energy electron, for example, having negative energy and therefore negative mass prior to observation. After observation, it is seen as positive energy, a positive mass electron of opposite charge to the conventional electron and reacting with fields in opposite direction from the conventionally negatively charged electron. In short, after observation (interaction with mass) it becomes a positron.<sup>75</sup>

*See also* Dirac sea; electron; phase-conjugate.

**time-reversed wave:** A phase-conjugate or time-reversed wave is a wave that travels backward through time. That is, it is capable of precisely retracing the path through space taken by another wave that traveled that path to a nonlinear mirror, stimulating the reflection of the time-reversed wave. Further, in retracing its invisible path through space, the phase-conjugate replica wave does not diverge as normal waves do. Instead, it continually converges upon its invisible trace.<sup>76</sup>

**time travel:** Time is illusory because past and future are connected to the present as possibilities. Our reality (that is, the universe) is a hologram, and at any instant, consciousness is the totality of the coherent signaling within the living matrix (including wave fronts reflected from specific information-containing structures that are maintained by our choices on a moment-to-moment basis and shape our experiences of the world). We each have valuable roles in the big picture—the matrix. Everything is connected to everything else holographically. In Matrix Energetics, we teach that photons can go backward and forward in time. They say that a wave of photons traveling forward in time represents the “advanced wave,”

and the one traveling backward in time is the “retarded wave.” Where these phase-conjugated waves of photons intersect creates the present moment. Why do you suppose we have a part of the brain called the temporal lobe? Fred Alan Wolf, an author and independent scholar and researcher in physics and consciousness, theorizes that it might have something to do with time travel. He has said that there *is* a time-travel machine, and that it is our brain. In Matrix Energetics, a human body is ultimately composed of streams of photons held together by consciousness. If photons can travel backward and forward in time and that is ultimately what you are composed of, then this suggests that you can do so as well. The time-travel technique is based upon this fundamental concept.

**torsion field:** The quantum spin of empty space, the large-scale coherent effects of the spin of the particles in the virtual sea. Also known as a spinor field, axion field, spin field, and microlepton field. Initial work in this area of study was performed by Albert Einstein and Élie Cartan in the 1920s; now it is known as the ECT

(Einstein-Cartan theory). Such fields are generated by classical spin or by the angular momentum density (on a macroscopic level) of any spinning object. The spinning of an object sets up polarization in two spatial cones, corresponding to a left torsion field and a right torsion field. At an atomic level, nuclear spin, as well as full atomic movements, may be the source of torsion fields, which means that all objects in nature generate their own torsion field. These fields are not affected by distance, spread instantaneously in space, interact with material objects by exchanging information, and explain such phenomena as telepathy and photokinesis.<sup>77</sup>

**Two-Point:** A measuring tool that supercharges our ability to notice where we can plug into the grid of the *All That Is*. As you hold the two points, feel the connection between them. Feel and imagine that you are just working with photons or light.

There is no body there, nothing solid except for your focus on the two points. You can imagine that you are linked and “entangled” with another person or area of yourself that you have chosen to focus on. Now, having connected those two points and realized that at the level of quantum physics the act of measuring actually causes a change in your measurement, you let

go as if you were dropping a pebble into the pond. You imagine that you let go of the need for that to be physical and feel an expansive wave between those two points. When you practice the art of Two-Point, it represents a new paradigm for things you can do or access with your sensory modality of touch. If you endeavor to do this on a daily basis, you'll begin to have glimpses of the hidden reality and its complexities behind the shroud of daily events.

Things no longer happen to you. Instead, you begin to take responsibility for your creative use of universal energy.

**uncertainty principle:** The principle of quantum mechanics, formulated by Werner Heisenberg, that the accurate measurement of one of two related, observable quantities, as position and momentum or energy and time, produces uncertainties in the measurement of the other, such that the product of the uncertainties of both quantities is equal to or greater than  $h/2\pi$ , where  $h$  equals Planck's constant. Also called the indeterminacy principle ( *Random House Dictionary* [New York: Random House, 2009]). In conventional quantum physics, the origin of zero-point energy is the Heisenberg uncertainty principle since a parallel uncertainty exists between measurements involving time and energy (and other so-called conjugate variables in quantum mechanics). This minimum uncertainty is not due to any correctable flaws in measurement, but rather reflects an intrinsic quantum fuzziness in the very nature of energy and matter springing from the wave nature of the various quantum fields.

This leads to the concept of zero-point energy.<sup>78</sup>

**unified theory:** A unified theory of the four forces of physics—the electromagnetic, gravitational, strong, and weak forces—that is not just an intellectual model but also engineerable on the laboratory bench and in actual physical systems using higher-symmetry electrodynamics as a special subset of Mendel Sachs's unified field theory.<sup>79</sup>

**vacuum:** Space devoid of observable matter. In modern theory, the “empty” space is in fact bristling with very rapid fluctuations of electromagnetic energy, remaining in the virtual state. It is also filled with a violent, fluctuating flux of virtual particles, appearing and disappearing so quickly

that an individual particle does not persist long enough to be individually detected. Thus, the vacuum is extraordinarily energetic, but the energy is in very special form (fleeting violent fluctuations and virtual particle flux). Nonetheless, because it contains enormous energy, the average vacuum may be considered a potential.<sup>80</sup>

**vector:** In mathematics, a quantity having both magnitude and direction. For example, an ordinary quantity, or scalar, can be exemplified by the distance 6 km; a vector quantity can be exemplified by the term 6 km north. Vectors are usually represented by directed line segments; the length of the line segment is a measure of the vector quantity, and its direction is the same as that of the vector.<sup>81</sup>

**virtual particle:** A fleeting quantum particle that spontaneously appears and disappears so swiftly that it cannot be individually observed; it exists only temporarily. The virtual particle does not satisfy the usual relation between energy, momentum, and mass because it is underneath the Heisenberg uncertainty principle.

The virtual particle can have any amount of energy momentarily, so long as the product of its energy and the time interval of its existence is less than the uncertainty principle's minimum magnitude. Nonetheless, the interactions of large numbers of virtual particles with a mass or charge can combine to generate real observable effects. In quantum field theory, all forces of nature are caused by the interaction of the forced mass entity with virtual particles.<sup>82</sup>

**virtual reality:** Virtual realities are consciousness technologies that allow users to interact with an energetic set of patterns or environment, be it a real or imagined one. If everything is a result of the interplay of consciousness with the foundation blocks of physical matter, photons, and virtual particles, then in one sense every view of reality is virtual and not actual.

**virtual reality template:** A pattern of data that may be used to match input or generate output into a virtual reality system.

**visible electromagnetic spectrum:** Visible light waves are the only electromagnetic waves we can see. We see these waves as the colors of the

rainbow. Each color has a different wavelength. Red has the longest wavelength and violet has the shortest wavelength. When all the waves are seen together, they make white light. When white light shines through a prism, the white light is broken apart into the colors of the visible light spectrum. Water vapor in the atmosphere can also break apart wavelengths, creating a rainbow.<sup>83</sup>

**waveform:** A graphical representation of the shape of a wave for a given instant in time over a specified region in space.<sup>84</sup>

**weak quantum measurement:** Weak measurements are a type of quantum measurement, where the measured system is weakly coupled to the measuring device so that the system is not disturbed by the measurement. Although seemingly contradictory to some basic aspects of quantum theory, the formalism lies within the boundaries of the theory and does not contradict any fundamental concept. The idea of weak measurements and weak values, first developed by Yakir Aharonov, David Albert, and Lev Vaidman, is especially useful for gaining information about pre- and post-selected systems described by the two-state vector formalism.<sup>85</sup>

**Wheeler, John Archibald:** An eminent American theoretical physicist who coined the terms “black hole” and “wormhole” and the phrase “it from bit,” and whose myriad scientific contributions figured in many of the research advances of the twentieth century. Wheeler was known for his drive to address big, overarching questions in physics, subjects he liked to say merged with philosophical questions about the origin of matter, information, and the universe. He was a young contemporary of Albert Einstein and Niels Bohr and was a driving force in the development of both the atomic and hydrogen bombs, and in later years he became the father of modern general relativity.<sup>86</sup>

**zero-point energy:** The energy that remains when all other energy is removed from a system. This behavior is demonstrated, for example, by liquid helium. As the temperature is lowered to absolute zero, helium remains a liquid, rather than freezing to a solid, owing to the irremovable zero-point energy of its atomic motions. (Increasing the pressure to twenty-five atmospheres causes helium to freeze.) Quantum mechanics predicts the existence of what are usually called

“zero-point” energies for strong, weak, and electromagnetic interactions, where the term refers to the energy of the system at temperature  $T = 0$ , or the lowest quantized energy level of a quantum mechanical system. Turning to Werner Heisenberg’s uncertainty principle, one finds that the lifetime of a given zero-point photon, viewed as a wave, corresponds to an average distance traveled of only a fraction of its wavelength. Such a wave “fragment” is somewhat different than an ordinary plane wave, and it is difficult to know how to interpret this.<sup>87</sup>

**zero-point energy field:** In quantum field theory, electromagnetic radiation can be pictured as waves flowing through space at the speed of light. The waves are not waves of anything substantive but ripples in a state of a theoretically defined field.

These waves do carry energy and momentum, however, and each has a specific direction, frequency, and polarization state. Each wave represents a “propagating mode of the electromagnetic field.” The zero-point field is the lowest energy state of a field, its lowest ground state not equal to zero. Quantum physics predicts that all space must be filled with electromagnetic zero-point fluctuations, thus creating a universal sea of zero-point energy. This phenomenon gives the quantum vacuum a complex structure, which can be probed experimentally, via the Casimir effect, for example. The term *zero-point field* is sometimes used as a synonym for the vacuum state of an individual quantized field. The electromagnetic zero-point field is loosely considered as a sea of background electromagnetic energy that fills the vacuum of space.<sup>88</sup> *See also* Casimir effect.

**zero-point reference time reference:** It is one thing to make invisible (or time travel) an object like a ship, but people have individual time references. You can

“reference” an object to “travel,” but with people you have to individually reference their “reference points” to make sure it will all work.<sup>89</sup>

## NOTES

# Introduction

1. Rupert Sheldrake, [www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary](http://www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary). \*
2. Richard Bartlett, *Matrix Energetics: The Science and Art of Transformation* (Hillsboro, OR: Atria Books/Beyond Words Publishing, 2007).

# Chapter 4

1. The Internet Movie Database,  
<http://www.imdb.com/character/ch0001072/>

[quotes](#).\*

2.

The

Quotation

Page,

published

by

Michael

Moncur,

[http://www.quotationspage.com/quotes/Wernher\\_von\\_Braun/](http://www.quotationspage.com/quotes/Wernher_von_Braun/).\*

# Chapter 6

1. Original definition by Dr. Mark Dunn and Dr. Richard Bartlett.

## Chapter 7

1. “The shell game that we play . . . is technically called ‘renormalization.’ But no matter how clever the word, it is still what I would call a dippy process! Having to resort to such hocus-pocus has prevented us from proving that the theory of quantum electrodynamics is mathematically self-consistent. It’s surprising that the theory still hasn’t been proved self-consistent one way or the other by now; I suspect that renormalization is not mathematically legitimate.” Richard P. Feynman, *QED: The Strange Theory of Light and Matter* (New York: Penguin, 1990), 128.

2. Tony Rothman, *Everything’s Relative: And Other Fables from Science and Technology* (Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons, 2003), 78–84.

3. P. Halmos, “The Legend of John von Neumann,” *American Mathematical Monthly* (April 1973), 382–94.

4. “Einstein’s postulates: (1) All the laws of physics are equally valid in all inertial frames of reference; (2) the speed of light is the same to every inertial observer; and (3) the observable local effects of a gravitational field are indistinguishable from those arising from the acceleration of the frame of reference.

The first is called the special relativity principle, the second is called the law of light propagation, and the third principle is called the equivalence principle.” Thomas E.

Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles* (Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2002), 647.

5. David Smith, *Quantum Sorcery* (Tokyo, Japan: Konton Publishing, 2006), 37.

6. The Internet Movie Database,  
<http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0087332/quotes>.\*

7. Indigenous Weather Modification (TWM) is a site dedicated to teaching indigenous WM technology, <http://twm.co.nz/forbquco.html>.\*

8. See the interview on Quantum Tantra with Nick Herbert, conducted by Joseph Matheny,

<http://74.125.155.132/>

[search?q=cache:s59QayXJ2oAJ:www.incunabula.org/](http://www.incunabula.org/search?q=cache:s59QayXJ2oAJ:www.incunabula.org/)

[inc3.html+ong%27s+hat+joseph+matheny+atoms+are+things&cd=1&hl=en&ct=clnk&gl=us](http://www.incunabula.org/inc3.html+ong%27s+hat+joseph+matheny+atoms+are+things&cd=1&hl=en&ct=clnk&gl=us).\*

9. Edward Whitmont, *The Alchemy of Healing: Psyche and Soma* (Berkeley, CA: North Atlantic Books, 1996), 29, quoted in Michael Talbot, *Beyond the Quantum* (New York: Bantam Books, 1988), 155.

10. Dennis Overbye, “John A. Wheeler; Physicist Who Coined the Term ‘Black Hole,’ Is Dead at 96,” *New York Times* (April 14, 2008), <http://www.nytimes.com/>

[2008/04/14/science/14wheeler.html?\\_r=1&pagewanted=2](http://www.nytimes.com/2008/04/14/science/14wheeler.html?_r=1&pagewanted=2).\*

# Chapter 9

1. The Internet Movie Database,

<http://www.imdb.com/character/ch0007463/>

[quotes](#).

2. Quotes, sayings, and poem at Litera.co.uk.,

<http://www.litera.co.uk/author/>

[jim\\_morrison/](#) \*

# Chapter 10

1. Paramahansa Yogananda, *Autobiography of a Yogi* (Los Angeles: Self-Realization Fellowship, 1946), 320–32.

# Chapter 11

1. Richard Bartlett, “The Music of Your Mind,” radio interview by Marla Frees, Portland, Oregon, May 3, 2007.

# Chapter 14

1. Hector Garcia, guest lecturer, Matrix Energetics seminar, May 2008.

# Chapter 16

1. David Hatcher, *Antigravity and the World Grid* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2006), 112.
2. Morris K. Jessup and Carlos Allende, *The Allende Letters and the VARO Edition of The Case For the UFOs* (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Global Communications/Conspiracy Journal, 2007), 28. Also see Charles Berlitz, interviewed by Dr. J. Manson Valentine, <http://www.scribd.com/doc/13355366/>  
[The-Philadelphia-Experiment-Charles-Berlitz.\\*](#)
3. Alexandra Bruce, *The Philadelphia Experiment Murder: Parallel Universes and the Physics of Insanity* (New York: Sky Books, 2001), 158.
4. Ibid., 157.
5. Ibid., 159.
6. Ibid., 160–161.
7. Michio Kaku, *Physics of the Impossible* (New York: Doubleday Random House, 2008), 48.
8. Tachi-Kawakami Laboratory Graduate School of Information Science and Technology, The University of Tokyo, [http://tachilab.org\\_](http://tachilab.org_)\*
9. Sarah Yang, Media Relations, “Invisibility Shields One Step Closer with New Metamaterials that Bend Light Backwards,” *UC Berkeley News*, August 11, 2008, [http://berkeley.edu/news/media/releases/2008/08/11\\_light.shtml](http://berkeley.edu/news/media/releases/2008/08/11_light.shtml).\*
10. Kaku, *Physics of the Impossible*, 38.

11. Yang, “Invisibility Shields One Step Closer with New Metamaterials that Bend Light Backwards.”\*

12 Kaku, *Physics of the Impossible*, 38.

13. Jay Alfred, *Between the Moon and Earth* (Victoria, BC: Trafford Publishing, 2006), 31.

14. Plasma Universe presented by Los Alamos National Laboratory, associated with the IEEE Nuclear and Plasma Sciences Society, <http://plasmascience.net/tpu/>

[ubiquitous.html](http://plasmascience.net/tpu/ubiquitous.html).\*

15. Magnet Import, <http://www.magnetimport.no/subtle.html>.\*

16. Jay Alfred, “Bioplasma Bodies: The Ovoid or the Body’s Magnetosphere,”

Ezineartics,

2007.

<http://ezinearticles.com/>

?Bioplasma-Bodies---The-Ovoid-or-the-Bodys-Magnetosphere&id=770297

(emphasis mine).\*

17. Steve Richards, *Invisibility: Mastering the Art of Vanishing* (London: Aquarian Press, 1982), 16–17.

18. Ibid., 41.

19. Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Saint Germain on Alchemy: Formulas for Self-Transformation* (Livingston, MT: Summit University Press, 1988), 200.

# Chapter 18

1. Comte de Saint Germain and Mark Prophet, *Studies in Alchemy: The Science of Self-Transformation* (Gardiner, MT: Summit University Press, 1997),

<http://www.summituniversitypress.com/books/sgalchemy.html>. \*

2. “Where there is no vision, the people perish: but he that keeps the law, happy is he.” Proverbs 29:18 (American King James Version).

3. Matthew 7:7 (American King James Version).

## Chapter 20

1. Mark L. Prophet, *Science of the Spoken Word*, 8th ed. (Gardiner, MT: Summit University Press, 1998). First attention expresses a function of physical sight and intellect; second attention conveys a function of the energetic body.

2. “Thou shalt also decree a thing, and it shall be established unto thee; and light shall shine upon thy ways.” Job 22:28 (American Standard Version).

## Chapter 23

1. Mervin Rees discovered the temporal sphenoidal (TS) line, reflex points points for muscles, organs, and glands, during World War II. In 1955 he began practicing in Sedan, Kansas, and in 1956, he began the sacro occipital technique. In 1974 Rees was installed as a director of Sacro Occipital Research Society International, and in 1980 he introduced his original technique, the Soft Tissue Orthopedic technique, which eventually led to a harmonic technique. See Maeda Shigeru, “Chiropractic in Japan,” 1996, <http://www.asahi-net.or.jp/~xf6s-med/eoverview.html>. Also see the Association Culturelle Chiropractic Team, “The First European AK Meetings, 1976–1978,” *The International Journal of Applied Kinesiology and Kinesiologic Medicine*, Issue 20 (Fall 2005), <http://www.kinmed.com>\*

# Chapter 24

1. Matthew 13:12 (American Standard Version).
2. Sheldrake, [www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary](http://www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary).\*
3. Thomas E. Bearden, *Radionics: Action at a Distance*, DVD, (1990; Atlanta, GA: Cheniere Media, 2006), <http://www.cheniere.org/sales/buy-ra.htm>.\*

## Matrix Glossary

1.

The

Light

Party,

“Radionics”

(1996),

[www.lightparty.com/Health/](http://www.lightparty.com/Health/)

[Radionics.html](http://www.lightparty.com/Health/Radionics.html). \*

2. *The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language*, 4th ed. s.v.

“aether physics”; *Encyclopedia Britannica Online*, s.v. “aether physics”.\*

3.

Thomas

E.

Bearden

(1997),

<http://www.cheniere.org/techpapers/>

[Annotated%20Glossary.htm](http://www.cheniere.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm).\*

4. *Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary*, 11th ed., s.v. "archetypes"; Mike Adams, ed., "Survey Results Reveal the Most Trusted Health News Websites and Personalities," NaturalNews.com (April 9, 2008),

<http://www.naturalnews.com/>.\*

5. E. T. Whittaker, "On the Partial Differential Equations of Mathematical Physics,"

*Mathematische*

*Annalen*,

57

(1903),

333–355;

Bearden,

<http://www.cheniere.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm>.\*

6. Bearden,

<http://www.cheniere.org/books/excalibur/glossary/014edited.htm>.\*

7. Institute for Bioelectromagnetics and New Biology, <http://www.bion.si>.\*

8. Marshall Space Flight Center, Biography of Dr. Wernher von Braun, <http://history.msfc.nasa.gov/vonbraun/bio.html>.\*

9. Nobelprize.org, "Biography," [http://nobelprize.org/nobel\\_prizes/physics/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/)

laureates/1929/broglie-bio.html.\*

10. Thomas E. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles* (Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2002), 622.

11. Calphysics Institute, “Zero-Point Energy and Zero Point Field,”

<http://www.calphysics.org/zpe.html>. \*

12. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 626.

13. *Dictionary of Science and Technology*, 1st ed., Christopher G. Morris, ed, s.v.

“coherence.”

14. Claus Kiefer, “On the Interpretation of Quantum Theory: From Copenhagen to the Present Day” (Oct. 2002), <http://arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0210152>. \*

15. David E. Joyce, “Dave’s Short Course on Complex Numbers: Reciprocals, Conjugates,

and

Division”

(1999),

<http://www.clarku.edu/~djoyce/complex/>

[div.html](http://www.clarku.edu/~djoyce/complex/div.html). \*

16. Erich Joos, *Decoherence* (2008), <http://www.decoherence.de/>. \*

17. Nobelprize.org, “Biography,”  
[http://nobelprize.org/nobel\\_prizes/physics/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/)

laureates/1933/dirac-bio.html.\*

18. Calphysics Institute, “Zero-Point Energy and Zero Point Field,”

<http://www.calphysics.org/zpe.html>;

posted

comment

on

“Dirac’s

Hidden

Geometry,”

blog

thread

*Not*

*Even*

*Wrong*

(Sept.

25,

2005),

<http://www.math.columbia.edu/~woit/wordpress/?p=262#comment-5066>.\*

19. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 660.

20. *Ibid.*, 65.

21. Richard Feynman, *The American Heritage Dictionary of the English Language*, 4th ed. s.v. “Feynman, Richard.”

22. William A. Tiller, *Science and Human Transformation: Subtle Energies, Intentionality, and Consciousness* (Walnut Creek, CA: Pavior Publishing, 1997), 89.

23.

Garcia

Chiropractic

Holistic

Center

(2009),

<http://www.garcia>

[holisticchiro.com/about\\_dr.php](http://www.garciaholisticchiro.com/about_dr.php). \*

24. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 677.

25. Ibid., 678.

26. William Reville, prof., “Ireland’s Greatest Mathematician,” University College, Cork, Ireland (2004), [http://understandingscience.ucc.ie/pages/](http://understandingscience.ucc.ie/pages/sci_williamrowanhamilton.htm)

[sci\\_williamrowanhamilton.htm](http://understandingscience.ucc.ie/pages/sci_williamrowanhamilton.htm). \*

27. Institute of HeartMath, “Science of the Heart: Exploring the Role of the Heart in

Human

Performance”

(2009),

4,

<http://www.heart-math.org/research/science-of-the-heart-head-heart-interactions.html>. \*

28. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 680.

29. Nobelprize.org, “Biography,”  
[http://nobelprize.org/nobel\\_prizes/physics/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/)

[laureates/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/laureates/)

[1932/heisenberg-bio.html](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/laureates/1932/heisenberg-bio.html). \*

30. Boston University School of Theology: Anna Howard Shaw Center,  
“Biography,”

<http://sthweb.bu.edu/shaw/anna-howard-shaw>

[center/](http://sthweb.bu.edu/shaw/anna-howard-shaw)

[biography?view=mediawiki&article=Nick\\_Herbert\\_%28physicist%29](http://sthweb.bu.edu/shaw/anna-howard-shaw/biography?view=mediawiki&article=Nick_Herbert_%28physicist%29). \*

31. Hologram: Michael Talbot, *The Holographic Universe* (New York: HarperCollins, 1991), 14.

32. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 719.

33. Glenda Green, “More Than Meets the Eye,” [www.glendagreen.com](http://www.glendagreen.com). \*

34. Fred Alan Wolf, *The Eagle’s Quest: A Physicist Finds the Scientific Truth at the Heart of the Shamanic World* (New York: Touchstone, 1997), 145–46.

35. Danish mathematician Tor Nørretranders, quoted in James Oschman, *Energy Medicine*

*in*

*Therapeutics*

*and*

*Human*

*Performance*

(Boston:

Butterworth-Heinemann,

2003);

“Ponderings

and

Learnings,”

[http://www.craniosacralpath.com/blog\\_](http://www.craniosacralpath.com/blog_) \*

36. Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy, “Many-Worlds Interpretation of Quantum

Mechanics”

(Mar.

24,

2002),

<http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/>

[qm-manyworlds/](http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/qm-manyworlds/).\*

37. James Clerk Maxwell Foundation,

<http://www.clerkmaxwellfoundation.org/>

[html/](#)

[who\\_was\\_maxwell.html.\\*](#)

38. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 693.

39. Bearden,

<http://www.cheniere.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm>.\*

40.

Joe

McMoneagle,

“Business

Bio,”

<http://blog.mceagle.com/about/>

[joe-bio-biz.\\*](#)

41. Sheldrake, [www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary](http://www.sheldrake.org/Resources/glossary).\*

42. Ibid.

43. Ibid.

44. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 694.

45. Thomas E. Bearden, *AIDS Biological Warfare* (Greenville, TX: Tesla Book Company, 1988), 152.

46. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 663.

47.

MSN

Encyclopedia

Article

Center,

<http://encarta.msn.com/>

[encyclopedia\\_761579159/](#)

[John\\_Von\\_Neumann.html.\\*](#)

48. Carlos Castaneda, *Journey to Ixtlan* (New York: Washington Square Press, 1972), 189.

49. Bearden,

<http://www.cheniery.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm>.\*

50. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 699.

51. Ibid., 719.

52. Josh Clark, "Do Parallel Universes Really Exist?", *How Stuff Works*, <http://science.howstuffworks.com/parallel-universe.htm>.\*

53. Bearden,

<http://www.cheniery.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm>.\*

54. Frank Swain, SciencePunk.com (Oct. 5, 2006),

<http://www.sciencepunk.com/>

[2006/10/albert-abrams-2/](#).\*

55. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 703.

56. Thomas J. McFarlane, *Quantum Physics, Depth Psychology, and Beyond*, The Center of Integral Science (June 21, 2000),

<http://www.integralscience.org/>

[psyche-physis.html](#). \*

57. Richard P. Feynman, Robert B. Leighton, Matthew Sands, *The Feynman Lectures on Physics*, vol. 1, 2nd ed. (London: Addison Wesley, 2005), 11.

58. United States Psychotronics Association, “What Is Psychotronics?,”

<http://www.psychotronics.org/aboutus.htm>. \*

59. *Dictionary of Science and Technology*, s.v. “quantum field theory.”

60. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 710.

61. *Ibid.*, 711.

62. *Ibid.*

63. *Encyclopaedia Britannica Online*, s.v. “renormalization.”

64. Bruce Lee Foundation,

<http://www.bruceleefoundation.com/index1000.html>. \*

65. The Summit Lighthouse, Summit University, “Ascended Masters,”

<http://www.tsl.org/Masters/SaintGermain.asp>. \*

66. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 714.

67. *Ibid.*

68. Nobelprize.org, “Biography,”

[http://nobelprize.org/nobel\\_prizes/physics/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/)

[laureates/1933/](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/laureates/1933/)

[schrodinger-bio.html](http://nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/laureates/1933/schrodinger-bio.html). \*

69. Antero Alli, ParaTheatrical Research, <http://www.paratheatrical.com>. \*

70. Artificial Intelligence Lab, University of Michigan,  
<http://ai.eecs.umich.edu/>

[cogarch0/common/prop/serial.html](http://ai.eecs.umich.edu/cogarch0/common/prop/serial.html).\*

71.

Sheldrake,

[www.sheldrake.org/papers/Morphic/morphic\\_intro.html](http://www.sheldrake.org/papers/Morphic/morphic_intro.html);

[www.sheldrake.org/homepage.html](http://www.sheldrake.org/homepage.html);

[www.sheldrake.org/About/biography/](http://www.sheldrake.org/About/biography/)

[pwfund.html](http://www.sheldrake.org/About/biography/pwfund.html).\*

72. *Dictionary of Science and Technology*, s.v. “super-coherent.”

73. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 722.

74. William A. Tiller Foundation, “bio,” <http://www.tillerfoundation.com/biography.php>.\*

75. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 726.

76. Bearden, *AIDS Biological Warfare*, 105.

77. Patent Storm, U.S. Patent 6548752: system and method for generating a torsion field, issued April 15, 2003,  
<http://www.patentstorm.us/patents/6548752/>

[description.html](http://www.patentstorm.us/patents/6548752/description.html); Uvitor, “history,” <http://www.shipov.com/history.html>.\*

78. *Random House Dictionary*, 4th ed., s.v. “uncertainty principle”; Calphysics Institute, “Zero-Point Energy and Zero Point Field,”  
<http://www.calphysics.org/>

[zpe.html](#); Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy, “The Uncertainty Principle,” (Jul. 3, 2006), <http://plato.stanford.edu/entries/qt-uncertainty/>.\*

79. Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, 728.

80. Ibid., 729.

81.

MSN

Encyclopedia

Article

Center,

<http://encarta.msn.com/>

[encyclopedia\\_761572843/Vector\\_\(mathematics\).html](http://encarta.msn.com/encyclopedia_761572843/Vector_(mathematics).html).\*

82. Bearden,

<http://www.cheniere.org/techpapers/Annotated%20Glossary.htm>.\*

83. National Aeronautics and Space Administration, March 27, 2007, “Visible Light Waves,”

<http://science.hq.nasa.gov/kids/imagers/ms/visible.html>.\*

84. *Dictionary of Science and Technology*, s.v. “waveforms.”

85. Yakir Aharonov, D. Z. Albert, and Lev Vaidman, “How the Result of a Measurement of a Component of the Spin of a Spin-1/2 Particle Can Turn Out to Be 100,” *Physical Review Letters*, 1988.

86. Kitta MacPherson, “Leading Physicist John Wheeler Dies at Age 96,” *News at Princeton University* (April 14, 2008),

<http://www.princeton.edu/main/news/>

[archive/S20/82/08G77/](http://www.princeton.edu/main/news/archive/S20/82/08G77/).\*

87. Calphysics Institute, “Zero-Point Energy and Zero Point Field,”

<http://www.calphysics.org/zpe.html>. \*

88. Ibid.

89. The Philadelphia Experiment,

<http://www.phils.com.au/philadelphia.htm>. \*

\* *All URL sources accessed spring 2009.*

## **SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY**

Alfred, Jay. *Between the Moon and Earth*. Victoria, BC: Trafford Publishing, 2006.

———. *Brains and Realities*. Victoria, BC: Trafford Publishing, 2006.

———. *Our Invisible Bodies: Scientific Evidence for Subtle Bodies*. Victoria, BC: Trafford Publishing, 2006.

Aspden, Harold. *Modern Aether Science*. Southampton, UK: Sabbiton Publications, 1972.

Bartlett, Richard. *Matrix Energetics: The Science and Art of Transformation*.

Hillsboro, OR: Atria Books/Beyond Words, 2007.

Bearden, Thomas E. *AIDS Biological Warfare*. Greenville, TX: Tesla Book Company, 1988.

———. *Excalibur Briefing: Explaining Paranormal Phenomena*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2002.

———. *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2002.

———. *Oblivion: America at the Brink*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2005.

———. *Fer de Lance*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2003.

———. *Gravitobiology: A New Biophysics*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2003.

Bedini, John, and Thomas Bearden. *Free Energy Generation—Circuits and Schematics: 20 Bedini-Bearden Years*. Santa Barbara, CA: Cheniere, 2006.

Bentov, Itzhak. *Stalking the Wild Pendulum: On the Mechanics of Consciousness*.

Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, 1988.

———. *A Brief Tour of Higher Consciousness: A Cosmic Book on the Mechanics of Creation*. Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, 2006.

Cathie, Bruce L. *The Harmonic Conquest of Space*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 1998.

———. *The Energy Grid*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 1997.

Cheney, Margaret. *Tesla: Man Out of Time*. New York: Barnes & Noble Books, 1993.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Anti-Gravity and the Unified Field*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2001.

———. *The Time Travel Handbook: A Manual of Practical Teleportation and Time Travel*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 1999.

Chopra, Deepak. *The Third Jesus: The Christ We Cannot Ignore*. New York: Harmony, 2008.

Coats, Callum. *Living Energies: An Exposition of Concepts Related to the Theories of Viktor Schauberger*. Dublin, Ireland: Gateway Books, 2001.

Cook, Nick. *The Hunt for Zero Point: One Man's Journey to Discover the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb*. London: Century, 2001.

Dalal, A. S. *Powers Within*. Pondicherry, India: Sri Aurobindo Ashram Publications Department, 1999.

Deary, Terry. *Vanished!* Boston: Kingfisher, 2004.

Dennett, Preston. *Human Levitation: A True History and How-to Manual*. Grand Rapids, MI: Schiffer Publishing, 2006.

Dolley, Chris. *Shift*. Riverdale, NY: Baen Books, 2007.

Dowling, Levi. *The Aquarian Gospel of Jesus the Christ*. New York: Cosimo Classics, 2007.

Dunn, Christopher. *The Giza Power Plant: Technologies of Ancient Egypt*.

Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 1998.

Durr, Hans-Peter, Fritz-Albert Popp, and Wolfram Schommers. *What Is Life?*

*Scientific Approaches and Philosophical Positions*. Hackensack, NJ: World Scientific, 2002.

Edwards, Harry. *Harry Edwards: Thirty Years a Spiritual Healer*. Surrey, UK: Jenkins, 1968.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2007.

———. *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2003.

———. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science*.

Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2005.

———. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons & the Cold War Allied Legend*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2005.

———. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2008.

———. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology*.

Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2006.

Friedman, Norman. *The Hidden Domain: Home of the Quantum Wave Function, Nature's Creative Source*. Eugene, OR: Woodbridge Group, 1997.

Garrison, Cal. *Slim Spurling's Universe: The Light-Life Technology: Ancient Science Rediscovered to Restore the Health of the Environment and*

*Mankind.*

Frederick, CO: IX-EL Publishing, 2004.

Green, Glenda. *The Keys of Jeshua*. Sedona, AZ: Spiritis Publishing, 2004.

Harbison, W. A. *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-made Flying Saucers*.

Charleston, SC: BookSurge, 2007.

Harpur, Patrick. *Daimonic Reality: A Field Guide to the Otherworld*.  
Ravens-dale, WA: Pine Winds, 2003.

Ho, Mae-Wan. *The Rainbow and the Worm: The Physics of Organisms*.

Hack-ensack, NJ: World Scientific, 1998.

Hoagland, Richard C., and Mike Bara. *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*.

Los Angeles: Feral House, 2007.

James, John. *The Great Field: Soul at Play in a Conscious Universe*.  
Fulton, CA: Energy Psychology Press, 2008.

King, Moray B. *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy & Pulsed Plasma Physics*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2005.

Knight, Christopher, and Alan Butler. *Who Built the Moon?* London:  
Watkins Publishing, 2005.

Kraft, Dean. *A Touch of Hope: A Hands-On Healer Shares the Miraculous Power of Touch*. New York: Berkley Trade, 1998.

Kron, Gabriel. *Tensors for Circuits*. New York: Dover Publications, 1959.

Laszlo, Ervin. *Science and the Akashic Field: An Integral Theory of Everything*.

Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions, 2004.

———. *Science and the Reenchantment of the Cosmos: The Rise of the Integral Vision of Reality*. Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions, 2006.

LaViolette, Paul A. *Genesis of the Cosmos: The Ancient Science of Continuous Creation*. Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 2004.

———. *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology*. Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 2008.

———. *Subquantum Kinetics: A Systems Approach to Physics and Cosmology*.

Alexandria, VA: Starlane Publications, 2003.

Lilly, John C. *The Scientist: A Metaphysical Autobiography*. Oakland, CA: Ronin Publishing, 1996.

Lloyd, Seth. *Programming the Universe: A Quantum Computer Scientist Takes on the Cosmos*. London: Vintage Books, 2007.

Lyne, William R. *Pentagon Aliens*. Lamy, NM: Creatopia Productions, 1999.

Maxwell, James Clerk. *An Elementary Treatise on Electricity*. Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2005.

Monroe, Robert A. *Journeys Out of the Body*. Garden City, NY: Anchor, 1977.

Moore, William, and Charles Berlitz. *The Philadelphia Experiment: Project Invisibility*. New York: Fawcett, 1995.

Murakami, Aaron C. *The Quantum Key*. Seattle: White Dragon, 2007.

Oschman, James L. *Energy Medicine: The Scientific Basis*. New York: Churchill Livingstone, 2000.

Pickover, Clifford A. *Sex, Drugs, Einstein, and Elves: Sushi, Psychedelics, Parallel Universes, and the Quest for Transcendence*. Petaluma, CA: Smart Publications, 2005.

Popp, Fritz Albert, and L. V. Belousov. *Integrative Biophysics: Biophotonics*. New York: Springer, 2003.

Prophet, Mark L., and Elizabeth Clare Prophet. *Saint Germain on Alchemy: Formulas for Self-Transformation*. Livingston, MT: Summit University, 1993.

Randles, Jenny. *Time Travel: Fact, Fiction & Possibility*. New York: Blandford Press, 1994.

Regardie, Israel. *The Golden Dawn: The Original Account of the Teachings, Rites*

*& Ceremonies of the Hermetic Order*. St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications, 1986.

Richards, Steve. *Invisibility: Mastering the Art of Vanishing*. Wellingborough, UK: Aquarian Press, 1982.

Rothman, Tony. *Everything's Relative: And Other Fables from Science and Technology*. Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons, 2003.

Rothman, Tony, and George Sudarshan. *Doubt and Certainty*. Reading, MA: Helix Books, 1998.

Russell, Edward W. *Report on Radionics: The Science Which Can Cure Where Orthodox Medicine Fails*. Essex, UK: C. W. Daniel, 1973.

Russell, Ronald, and Charles T. Tart. *The Journey of Robert Monroe: From Out-of-Body Explorer to Consciousness Pioneer*. Charlottesville, VA: Hampton Roads Publishing, 2007.

Samanta-Laughton, Manjir. *Punk Science: Inside the Mind of God*. Ropley, Hants, UK: O Books, 2006.

Sheldrake, Rupert. *The Presence of the Past: Morphic Resonance and the Habits of Nature*. Rochester, VT: Park Street, 1988.

Scheinfeld, Robert. *Busting Loose from the Money Game*. Hoboken, NJ: Wiley, 2006.

Strauss, Michael. *Requiem for Relativity: The Collapse of Special Relativity*.

Pembroke Pines, FL: RelativityCollapse.com, 2004.

Sussman, Janet I. *Timeshift: The Experience of Dimensional Change*. Fairfield, IA: Time Portal Publications, 1996.

Swanson, Claude. *The Synchronized Universe: New Science of the Paranormal*.

Tucson, AZ: Poseidia Press, 2003.

Talbot, Michael. *Mysticism and the New Physics*. New York: Penguin, 1993.

Tansley, David V. *Radionics Interface with the Ether Fields*. Boston: C. W. Daniel, 1975.

Tiller, William A. *Science and Human Transformation: Subtle Energies, Intentionality, and Consciousness*. Walnut Creek, CA: Pavior Publishing, 1997.

Tiller, William A., Walter Dibble, and Gregory J. Fandel. *Some Science Adventures with Real Magic*. Walnut Creek, CA: Pavior Publishing, 2005.

Tiller, William A., Walter Dibble, and Michael Kohane. *Conscious Acts of Creation: The Emergence of a New Physics*. Walnut Creek, CA: Pavior Publishing, 2001.

Valone, Thomas F. *Electrogravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology*. Washington, DC: Integrity Research Institute, 2000.

———. *Harnessing the Wheelwork of Nature: Tesla's Science of Energy*.

Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited, 2002.

———. *Practical Conversion of Zero-Point Energy: Feasibility Study of the Extraction of Zero-Point Energy from the Quantum Vacuum for the Performance of Useful Work*. 3rd ed. Beltsville, MD: Integrity Research Institute, 2003.

———. *Zero Point Energy: The Fuel of the Future*. Beltsville, MD: Integrity Research Institute, 2007.

Valone, Thomas F., and Elizabeth A. Rausher. *Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology*. Washington, DC: Integrity Research Institute, 2001.

Violette, John R. *Extra-Dimensional Universe: Where the Paranormal Becomes Normal*. Charlottesville, VA: Hampton Roads, 2005.

Wang, Robert. *The Qabalistic Tarot: A Textbook of Mystical Philosophy*.

Columbia, MD: Marcus Aurelius Press, 2004.

Wesson, Paul S. *Five-Dimensional Physics: Classical and Quantum Consequences of Kaluza-Klein Cosmology*. Hackensack, NJ: World Scientific, 2006.

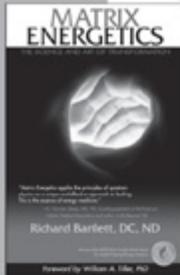
Yogananda, Paramahansa. *The Second Coming of Christ: The Resurrection of the Christ Within You*. Los Angeles: Self-Realization Fellowship, 2004.

———. *Self-Realization*. Los Angeles: Self-Realization Fellowship, 2004.

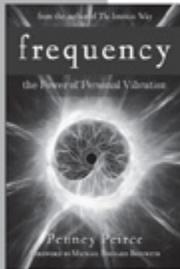
———. *The Yoga of Jesus: Understanding the Hidden Teachings of the Gospels*.

Los Angeles: Self-Realization Fellowship, 2007.

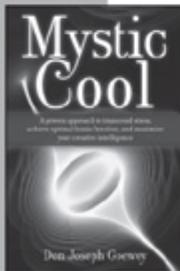
## More from Atria Books/ Beyond Words



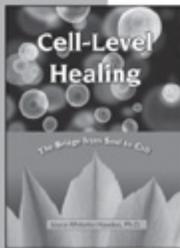
**Matrix Energetics: The Science and Art of Transformation** provides an easily reproducible, results-oriented process of healing and change that draws on the fundamental principles of quantum and scalar physics. As the author of this paradigm-busting book, Dr. Richard Bartlett teaches anyone how to access their own creative power to heal and transform their lives.



As we move out of the age of technology and into the age of intuition, we need the tools to understand what it means to be a vibrational being and how our thoughts, emotions, and natural frequency affect us. **Frequency: The Power of Personal Vibration** gives readers the tools to understand how to develop a conscious sensitivity to that frequency, to increase creativity, clarity, and peace in daily life. By understanding the role that energy plays, we understand the real power behind the laws of the universe.



What if you could become immune to stress? You can! **Mystic Cool: A Proven Approach to Transcend Stress, Achieve Optimal Brain Function, and Maximize Your Creative Intelligence** provides a proven approach to tapping the enormous power of neuroplasticity, the brain's ability to re-wire itself. Science shows that our positive thoughts can literally circumvent established physical pathways with a few simple exercises, and it's easier than you think!



An internationally renowned biologist, student, and practitioner of traditional Eastern healing methods, Dr. Joyce Hawkes shows how you can repair and renew your body at the cellular level in **Cell-Level Healing: The Bridge from Soul to Cell**. With profound yet simple exercises to explore the principles of appreciation, clearing, and flow, this book provides a guide to tapping your innate healing abilities.

[www.simonandschuster.com](http://www.simonandschuster.com)

**ATRIA BOOKS**  
A Division of Simon & Schuster  
A CBS COMPANY

**BEYOND  
WORDS**

# Document Outline

- [Cover Page](#)
- [Title Page](#)
- [Copyright Page](#)
- [Dedication Page](#)
- [Contents](#)
- [Acknowledgments](#)
- [Introduction](#)
- [❖\\_❖](#)
- [2 From the Beginning: How Matrix Energetics Started](#)
- [3 Build Trust in the Unknown by Asking Open-Ended Questions](#)
- [4 Fundamental Lessons in Duality](#)
- [5 Do Nothing Versus Technique](#)
- [6 The Quantum Conundrum](#)
- [7 The Science of Made-Up Stuff](#)
- [8 The Power of Command Versus Control](#)
- [9 Wait a Minute. What Just Happened Here?](#)
- [10 Collapsing the Wave](#)
- [11 Collapsing the Wave Function of the Human Experience](#)
- [12 Trust Whatever Shows Up in the Moment](#)
- [13 Time for a Change](#)
- [14 Many-Worlds Theory and You](#)
- [15 The Physics of Miracles](#)
- [16 The Science of Invisibility](#)
- [17 Solving the Mystery of Levitation](#)
- [18 Archetypes: Making a Love Connection with the Stuff in Your Head](#)
- [19 Practicing the Art of Innocent Perception](#)
- [20 Human Intention and Divine Intervention](#)
- [❖\\_❖](#)
- [❖\\_❖](#)
- [23 Creating Advanced Artificial Templates](#)
- [24 The Manifestation Chapter](#)

- [Matrix Glossary](#)
- [Notes](#)
- [Selected Bibliography](#)